

Laarim Grammar Book

Authors:

Clement Lopeyok Joseph
Michael Vorgol Lochule
Joseph Celestine Lolar
Lolar John Hillary
Anjelo Lomong Lojakoi
James Lotabo Loduko
Marino Kolipoth Lopirimoi
Logwemoi Peter Marino
Jusphine Kadong Peter
Mary Natome Kamilo
James Lokwangan Lokwar
Konyen Joseph Lokiriam

Fourth Edition
SIL-Sudan

This book is used to teach how certain words correctly fit together in phrases, clauses, and sentences.

Contact Address:
Laarim Translation and Literacy Project
c/o SIL-Sudan
P.O. Box 64
Juba
Sudan

© 2013, Laarim Translation and Literacy Project

Fourth Edition February 2013

Publisher: SIL-Sudan

Place of Publication: Juba

Introduction

In the Laarim language there are several different types of words: nouns, verbs, pronouns, adjectives, adverbs, location words, connectors, and others. We will learn about these in this book. We will also learn about how the words go together into groups of words called phrases, clauses, and sentences. The words and how they go together are called grammar.

Learning about the words and groups of words in Laarim can help you become a better reader and writer. It is especially important for those writing books and translating Scripture to understand the lessons of this book.

The lessons of the *Laarim Consonant and Vowel Book* should be learned before learning from this book. Most examples sentences in this book come from the stories *Abaak Ngaai Ōlōō (Women)*, *Nyekuta cī Kēlēgē cīk Ayak Otoo (Hare)*, *Kabbīrrēn kī Tulluuwu (Squirrel)*, and *Et cī Ēgēēnyī cī Nyatī (Wiseman)*.

Some words such as ‘consonant’ and ‘vowel’ are used in this book without being explained. These words are explained in the *Laarim Consonant and Vowel Book*. If you forget their meaning, you can look them up in the glossary at the back of this book. There are many new words in this book which are used to explain the grammar of Laarim. Each new word is underlined and explained when it is first used. If you later see the word and forget what it means, you can also find it explained in the glossary at the back of the book.

This book can be taught to participants in a workshop. A person can also use this book to teach himself/herself without a workshop or instructor. You should read each lesson and then immediately do the exercise following the lesson. The exercise will help you test your understanding of the lesson. The answers to the exercises are in the back of the book. After completing an exercise, immediately check your answers to see how well you have understood. For each of your incorrect answers, try to understand the correct answer. Ask other Laarim if you need help.

Contents

Introduction	3
Contents	4
Spelling rules	5
Nouns	12
Relational Nouns	22
Verbs	23
Clauses and Sentences	25
Punctuation Rules	26
Common Word Order in Clauses	27
Case suffixes	27
Subject Markers (Nominative Case)	28
Location Markers (Oblique Case)	33
Possessive Markers (Genitive Case)	36
Pronouns	40
Possessive Pronouns	42
Time of Ownership of Possessive Pronouns	45
Demonstrative and Indefinite Pronouns	49
Types of Clauses	50
Relative clauses	53
Types of Clauses with Relative Clauses	56
Adjectives	57
Number adjectives	61
Demonstrative and Indefinite Adjectives	62
Locatives	64
Adverbs	65
Question (Interogative) Pronouns	66
Verb Subject Markers with Final Consonants	69
Verb Subject Markers with Final Vowels	77
Verb Object Markers	78
Subjunctive Verbs (Irrealis)	81
Command Verbs (Imperatives)	83
Verbal Nouns	85
Derived verbs	86
Direction Verbs	89
Reciprocal Verbs	91
Instrument Verbs	92
Passive (Reflexive) Verbs	94
Benefit (Applicative)	96
Irregular Verbs	98
Auxiliary verbs	102
Types of Clauses	103
Connectors (conjunctions)	104
Dependent Clause Connectors Before Main Clauses	105
Main Clause Connectors	108
Dependent clause connectors after main clauses	110
Connectors for clauses inside other clauses	114
Negatives	116
Direct and Indirect speech	117
Glossary	118
Answers to Exercises	125

Spelling rules

In this book, we will learn about attachments to words. Sometimes the attachments come at the beginnings of words, such as **k-** in **kacini** ‘I see’. These attachments are called prefixes. Sometimes the attachments come at the end of words, such as **-ua** in **ahaatua** ‘tongues’. These are called suffixes.

Prefix		Suffix	
kacini	‘I see’	ahaatua	‘tongues’

Sometimes letters change when suffixes are attached to words. In this lesson, we learn spelling rules for letter changes when suffixes are attached.

Heavy and Light vowels in the same word

In the *Laarim Consonant and Vowel Book*, we learned the following rule about heavy and light vowels:

1. *The vowels in the same word are usually all heavy (without ~) or all light (with ~); heavy and light vowels are usually not mixed together in the same word.*

Heavy vowels together in the same word		Light vowels together in the same word	
keewu	‘spectacled weaver’	pūrūcē	‘clothing’
bekcioit	‘gourd’	bōōcīlīlōc	‘mushroom’
logreenit	‘insect’	būlēnīt	‘glory’

We also learned the following rule about the letter **a** with heavy and light vowels:

2. *The vowel /a/ commonly occurs together with either light or heavy vowels in the same word.*

/a/ with heavy vowels		/a/ with light vowels	
buracoc	‘seed of tree’	cōōlanīt	‘dung’
kulutānit	‘worm’	kagūranīt	‘pebble’
atheet	‘sheep’	kēēta	‘tree’

Heavy and light vowels with suffixes

When suffixes attach to words, there are other rules for heavy and light vowels. Sometimes heavy and light letters are both in the same word, and sometimes light vowels change to heavy vowels.

3. *Suffixes with heavy vowels may stay heavy when attached to words with light vowels, as in the following examples. The suffix is **bold**.*

Heavy vowels can remain heavy in the suffix when attached to light words

ē + u	=	ē, u	nyēgēr	nyēgē ua	‘fruit’
ō + u	=	ō, u	ōngōl	ōngō lua	‘elephant’
ũ + u	=	ũ, u	bũlũc	bũlũ cua	‘lake, pond’
ĩ + u	=	ĩ, u	cĩth	cĩth ua	‘dikdik’
ĩ + e	=	ĩ, e	lõtĩrĩc	lõtĩrĩ je	‘spear, small hoe’
ē + e	=	ē, e	kītēēn	kītēē nei	‘scorpions’
ō + e	=	ō, e	kõtōd	õtō de	‘climb(appl)’
ũ + e	=	ũ, e	kũwũdē	ũwũ de	‘drink(appl)’
ō + o	=	ō, o	bōwōl	bōwō lo	‘tortoise(poss)’
ē + o	=	ē, o	ngētēl	ngētē lo	‘rhinoceros(poss)’
ũ + o	=	ũ, o	tũwũlũc	tũwũlũ co	‘chicken(poss)’

However, other suffixes cause the vowels of the word to change.

4. *Some suffixes with heavy vowels cause the vowels of the word to become heavy also, as in the following examples. Sometimes the heavy suffix in **bold** is in the second column, and sometimes the suffix is in the first column.*

Heavy vowels in the suffix can cause light words to become heavy

ō + i	=	o, i	ngōdõt	ngoot io k	‘winds, breaths’
ĩ + i	=	i, i	wathĩn	wathini ok	‘days’
ũ + i	=	u, i	kũthũng	kuthung ti	‘knees’
ē + i	=	e, i	kēēnga	keeng ti	‘bellies, stomachs’
ē + ē	=	e, e	kebere ec	kēbērē	‘eye’
ũ + ē	=	u, e	mure ec	mūrē	‘fat, oil’
ē + o	=	e, o	lee vo c	lēēvō	‘clotted blood, scab’
ō + o	=	o, o	looto ro c	lōdōrō	‘ant’

5. *Suffixes with light vowels may stay light when attached to words with heavy vowels, as in the following examples.¹*

Light vowels can remain light in the suffix when attached to heavy words

u + ē	=	u, ē	duwwo	duww ēēn	‘wells’
u + ĩ	=	u, ĩ	muk	umu wĩt	‘Think!’
i + ĩ	=	i, ĩ	vir	ivir ĩt	‘Run!’
e + ĩ	=	e, ĩ	eev	eev ĩt	‘Cultivate!’

However, some suffixes have vowels that are either heavy or light to match the vowels of the word.

6. *Some suffixes have vowels that are heavy when attached to words with heavy vowels and light when attached to words with light vowels. The letter **I** below means either the vowel **ĩ** or **i**.*

¹ There have not been found any suffixes or words with light vowels that cause heavy vowels to become light.

Some suffixes become either heavy or light according to the word it is attached to

ĩ + I	=	ĩ, ĩ	kībīl	ĩbīlīt nēēgē	‘they stand’
ũ + I	=	ũ, ĩ	kūrūgūm	ūrūgūmīt nēēgē	‘they dance’
i + I	=	i, i	kijin	ijinīt nēēgē	‘they ask’
o + I	=	o, i	kōvōlōng	ovolongīt nēēgē	‘they cheated’
u + I	=	u, i	kumuk	umuit nēēgē	‘they think’
a + I	=	a, i	kadaak	adaīt nēēgē	‘they chew’

Vowels disappearing

Sometimes suffixes cause vowels to disappear.

7. When two vowels are joined by a suffix, usually only the second vowel remains, as in the following examples.

Usually when two vowels are joined, the first vowel disappears

a + u	=	u	maac <u>a</u>	maac <u>ua</u>	‘husbands’
i + u	=	u	kidoc <u>i</u>	kidoc <u>ua</u>	‘hammers’
a + e	=	e	talara <u>a</u>	talare <u>eta</u>	‘porridges (light)’
u + e	=	e	ngumngum <u>u</u>	ngumngume <u>eta</u>	‘owls’
o + e	=	e	logoro <u>o</u>	logore <u>eta</u>	‘gourds’
i + e	=	e	kidori <u>i</u>	kidore <u>eta</u>	‘lyres’
ĩ + e	=	e	doolec	dōōl <u>ĩ</u>	‘child’
ō + ē	=	ē	nyēlēr <u>ō</u>	nyēlēr <u>ēeta</u>	‘spears’
o + ē	=	ē	duww <u>o</u>	duww <u>ēen</u>	‘wells’
a + i	=	i	kuula <u>a</u>	kuul <u>i</u>	‘tails’
ē + i	=	i	ōl <u>ē</u>	ōl <u>ia</u>	‘bull(sub)’
ō + i	=	i	kīt <u>ō</u>	kīt <u>ia</u>	‘scorpion(sub)’
a + ĩ	=	ĩ	laata <u>a</u>	laat <u>ina</u>	‘soaked maize flours’
ē + ĩ	=	ĩ	kēlēg <u>īt</u>	kēlēg <u>ē</u>	‘animal’
e + ĩ	=	ĩ	taliiban <u>īt</u>	taliiban <u>e</u>	‘branch’

However, there are some exceptions as seen in the following words:

Exceptions where vowels do not disappear

aa + i	=	aai	ngaa <u>a</u>	ngaa <u>ai</u>	‘women’
ii + e	=	iee	rii <u>i</u>	rii <u>eeta</u>	‘shadows’
u + e	=	ue	tuggu <u>u</u>	tuggu <u>eeta</u>	‘shelters’
u + e	=	ue	tamm <u>u</u>	tamm <u>eena</u>	‘rains’
u + o	=	uo	ketelu <u>o</u>	ketelu <u>u</u>	‘bed bug’
i + ē	=	iē	kalli <u>i</u>	kalli <u>ēen</u>	‘whips’

8. When there are two **aa** or **ũ** vowels at the end of a word, **y** or **w** may be added before attaching a suffix beginning with a vowel.

y or w may be added before attaching a suffix beginning with a vowel

aa + o = aawo	maa	maawo	'lion(poss)'
aa + a = aawa	ngaa	ngaawak	'woman(poss)'
ĩĩ + ě = ĩĩyě	tĩĩ	tĩĩyěen	'crowns'
ĩĩ + a = ĩĩya	bĩĩ	bĩĩya	'stone(loc)'

Changing of the letter k

Sometimes suffixes cause consonants to change. Inbetween vowels, the consonant **k** can become **w**, **g**, **h** or disappear.

9. When a suffix is joined, **k** becomes **w** when preceded by **u**, **o** or **ō**, as shown in the following examples. When preceded by **i** or **a**, **k** also becomes **w** when followed by **u**, **ũ**, or **o**. The asterisk * marks vowel combinations which can apply to more than one rule.

k -> **w** when preceded by **u**, **o**, **ō** or when followed by **u**, **ũ**, **o**

uk + e = uwe	uduk	uduwe	'it was eaten'
uk + a = uwa	uduk	kuduwa na	'I ate'
ok + a = owa	molok	molowa	'voice (loc)'
ok + e = owe	nyiiok	nyiiowe	'monthes'
ok + o = owo	molok	molowo	'voice (pos)'
* ok + i = owi	molok	molowi	'voice (sub)'
* ōk + i = ōwi	tdōlōk	tdōlōwi	'shrew (sub)'
ōk + a = ōwa	mīrōk	mīrōwa	'enemy (sub)'
ōk + e = owe	mīrōk	mirowei	'enemy (loc)'
uk + u = uwu	uduk	kuduwu niia	'you(sg) ate'
ōk + u = owu	mīrōk	mirowu	'enemy (pos)'
ik + u = iwu	vatik	vatiwua	'fishing stickes'
ak + u = awu	nyeterak	nyeterawu	'bride (pos)'
ek + u = ewu	erek	erewu niia	'you(sg) ground'
ēk + u = ēwu	mēlēk	mēlēwua	'axes'
uk + ũ = uwu	ubuk	puwu	'open!'
ēk + ũ = ēkũ	ērēk	rēwũ	'grind!'
ak + ũ = akũ	abak	bawũ	'dwell!'
ik + o = iwo	ilik	iliwoi	'surround!'

10. When a suffix is joined, **k** becomes **g** when preceded by **ũ** or **ō**.

k -> **g** when preceded by **ũ** or **ō**

ũk + ě = ũgě	katūk	katũgěeta	'doors'
ũk + e = uge	kūtūk	kutugeeti	'mouthes'
ũk + o = ũgo	katūk	katũgo	'door (pos)'
* ũk + i = ugi	arūk	karugi na	'I live'
ũk + ĩ = ũgĩ	ũrūk	ũrũgĩt	'live!'
ũk + a = ũga	ũrūk	kuruga na	'I lived'
ũk + u = ugu	ũrūk	urugu niia	'you lived'

ũk + ũ	=	ũgũ	ũrũk	ũrũgũ	‘live!’
* ðk + i	=	ðgi	kðrððk	kðrððgi	‘compound (sub)’
ðk + a	=	ðga	kðrððk	kðrððk	‘compound (loc)’
ðk + ĩ	=	ðgĩ	ððk	ððgĩt	‘untie!’
ðk + u	=	ogu	ððk	oogu niia	‘you untied’
ðk + ũ	=	ðgũ	ððk	ððgũ	‘untie!’

11. When a suffix is joined, **k** becomes **h** when followed by **a**, when surrounded by **e**, or when **ik** is followed by **ĩ**.

k -> **h** when followed by **a**, when surrounded by **e**, or when **ik** is followed by **ĩ**

ak + a	=	aha	goryiak	goryiaha	‘thieves’
ek + a	=	eha	erek	kereha na	‘I ground’
ĩk + a	=	iha	ũrũbðthĩk	kũrũbðthĩha na	‘I reached’
ik + a	=	iha	irik	kiriha na	‘I flowed’
* ek + e	=	ehe	erek	erehe	‘it was ground’
ik + ĩ	=	ihi	irik	irihit	‘they flowed’

12. When a suffix is joined, **k** disappears when followed by **i**, **ĩ** or **e**.

k -> **nothing** when followed by **i**, **ĩ** or **e**

ak + i	=	ai	vallak	vallait	‘claw (sg)’
ak + ĩ	=	aĩ	adak	adaĩt	‘they bit’
ak + e	=	ae	adak	adae	‘it was bit’
uk + i	=	ui	aduk	kadui na	‘I eat’
uk + ĩ	=	ui	uduk	uduit	‘they ate’
* ok + i	=	oi	ocok	kocoi na	‘I soak’
* ðk + i	=	oi	mĩrðk	miroit	‘enemy (sg)’
ek + ĩ	=	ei	erek	ereit	‘they ground’
ek + i	=	ei	ennek	ennei ngaa aniita	‘woman tells you’
ek + e	=	ee	ennek	enneet ngaa agẽẽta	‘woman tells us’
ik + i	=	ii	arik	karii na	‘I flow’

13. When a suffix is joined, **k** becomes **c** when preceded by **e** and followed by **c**.

k -> **c** when preceded by **e** and followed by **c**

ek + c	=	ecc	kennek	kennecca naaga	‘we tell’
--------	---	-----	--------	----------------	-----------

14. The letter **k** remains **k** when followed by any other consonant, and when followed by **c** and preceded by any other vowel.

k -> **k** when followed by a consonant

ok + t	=	okt	boyio <u>k</u>	boyio <u>k</u> to	‘orphan (pos)’
ĩk + n	=	ĩkn	kĩthĩ <u>k</u>	kathĩ <u>k</u> na naaga	‘we hear’
uk + c	=	ukc	kumu <u>k</u>	kamuk <u>c</u> a naaga	‘we think’
ok + c	=	okc	kiri <u>k</u>	kiri <u>k</u> ca naaga	‘we go’

ak + c = akc | kadaak kadakca naaga ‘we bite’

There are two verbs (*uuk-u* ‘hit’, *tduk-u* ‘throw away’) in which final *k* surfaces as *k* regardless of the surrounding vowels.

kk -> **k** regardless of surrounding vowels

ukk + ũ = uku	uu <u>k</u>	uu <u>k</u> u	‘hit!’
ukk + ï = uki	uu <u>k</u>	uu <u>k</u> it	‘hit!’
ukk + u = uku	uu <u>k</u>	uu <u>k</u> u niia	‘you (sg) hit’

Noun suffix changes

There are several changes that can happen with noun suffixes.

15. When the noun plural suffix **-iok** is joined to a singular noun ending in **k**, **-iok** becomes **-jok**. When the suffix is joined to a noun ending in **r** or two vowels, **-iok** becomes **-yok**.

-io -> **-jo** when preceded by **k**;

-io -> **-yo** when preceded by **r** or two vowels

l + io = lio	buu <u>l</u>	buu <u>liok</u>	‘eating place’
k + io = okjo	kōrō <u>ōk</u>	korook <u>jok</u>	‘village, compound’
r + io = aryo	thii <u>r</u>	thii <u>ryok</u>	‘mountain, hill’
ua + io = uayo	ulu <u>a</u>	ulu <u>ayok</u>	‘funeral’

16. When a suffix beginning with a vowel is joined to a noun with the singular suffixes **-nit**, **-it**, **-it**, the **-i** of the suffix can disappear (optional).

-it -> **t** when followed by a vowel

nit + i = nti	logureen <u>it</u>	logureen <u>t</u>	‘insect(sub)’
nit + a = nta	karten <u>it</u>	karten <u>a</u>	‘grass bundle(loc)’
nit + o = nto	logureen <u>it</u>	logureen <u>o</u>	‘insect(poss)’
nit + ak = ntak	nyeteran <u>it</u>	nyeteran <u>tak</u>	‘bridegroom(poss.pl)’
oit + o = okto	boyio <u>it</u>	boyio <u>kto</u>	‘orphan(poss)’
ait + o = akto	goryia <u>it</u>	goryia <u>kto</u>	‘thief(poss)’

The final **k** in **boyiok** ‘orphans’ disappears when **-it** is added (**boyioit** ‘orphan’). However, when the possessive suffix **-o** is added and the **i** disappears, the **k** returns (**boyiokto** ‘orphan (pos)’).

17. In a few words that add a suffix beginning with **e**, a final **c** becomes **j**. However, sometimes **c** does not change to **j**, such as in the word *laamuce* ‘lace’.

In a few words, **c** -> **j** when followed by **e**

ac + e = aje	lōtar <u>ac</u>	lōtar <u>aje</u>	‘mat’
ïc + e = ïje	lōtīr <u>ic</u>	lōtīr <u>ije</u>	‘spear, small hoe’

uc + e = uce | laamuc laamue 'lace of sandal or shoe'

18. The word **et** 'person, man' when said by itself or as an object (receiver of action) has one *e*. Otherwise it has two *ee* as in **eeti** 'person, man (subject)'. The word **eet** 'people' always has two *ee*.²

Īcīn ngaa ĩmma **et** coo. A certain woman saw this **person**.
 Īcīn ngaa ĩmma **eet** ciko. A certain woman saw these **people**.
 Īcīn **eeti** coo maa ĩmma. This **person** saw a certain lion.
 Īcīnit **eeta** ciko maa ĩmma. These **people** saw a certain lion.

19. *Y* follows *i* and the ends of words, but *i* does not follow *e*, *a* or any other vowel at the end of words. *Y* follows *i* in **maamiy** 'with water'. But *i* follows *e* in **laabinei** 'with grains' and *i* follows *a* in **kaunyai** 'mothers-in-law'.

	<u>Correct</u>	<u>Wrong</u>	
iy	maami y	maami e	'water'
ei	laabi nei	laabi ney	'grain'
ai	kaun yai	kaun yay	'mother-in-law'

Exercise 1

Carefully read the test words between the two lines below. The **bold** or underlined letter in each test word may or may not be written correctly. Check the test word with the rules above. Then compare the test word with those on the left and right. If the word on the left is written correctly, circle it. Or, if the word on the right is written correctly, circle it. The first one has been done as an example

Left	Test Word			Right
ōngōlūa	ōngōl	ōngōl ua	'elephant'	<u>ōngōl</u> ua
būlūcūa	būlūc	būlūc ūa	'lake, pond'	būlūcua
ngōōtīōk	ngōōt	ngōōt io k	'winds, breaths'	ngōōtiok
kēbēreec	kēbērē	kēbērē ec	'eye'	kebereec
duwwēēn	duwwo	duww een	'wells'	duwween
ivirīt	vir	ivir īt	'Run!'	ivirit
ijjinīt	kijin	ijjin īt nēēgē	'they ask'	ijjinit
ūrūgūmīt	kūrūgūm	ūrūgū mīt nēēgē	'they dance'	ūrūgūmit
kidocūa	kidoci	kidoc ūa	'hammers'	kidocua
logorēēta	logoro	logor eeta	'gourds'	logoreeta
tīyēēn	tīi	tīy ēēn	'crowns'	tīyēēn

² Phonetically, the word **et** 'person, man' has a long vowel [eet]. In 2012, those at the Laarim Mark community check choose to write **et** 'person, man' with short vowel to distinguish it from the plural **eet** 'people' said before another word as in **eet ciko** 'these people' (and not before a pause or by itself as in **eeta** 'people').

goryiaa	goryiak	goryiaa	‘thieves’	goryiaha
nyiiloe	nyiilok	nyiilohe	‘months’	nyiilowe
katūēēta	katūk	katūgēēta	‘doors’	katūgēēta
vatiua	vatiḱ	vatiḱua	‘fishing sticks’	vatiwua
vallait	vallak	vallahit	‘claw (sg)’	vallahit
thiiryok	thiir	thiiryok	‘mountain, hill’	thiiriok
logureenito	logureenit	logureento	‘insect(poss)’	logureento
amutei	amut	amutey	‘with saliva’	amutey
tuwayiowii	tuwayiok	tuwayiowiy	‘at shepherds’	tuwayiowiy
eetinei	eeta	eetiney	‘from people’	eetiney

Nouns

A noun can be a person, place, thing, or idea. For example in the sentences below, **kōr** ‘sun’ **dōllian** ‘wax’, **eeti** ‘man’, **ngaa** ‘woman’, and **mūnnī** ‘fruit’ are all nouns.

Alangan **kōr dōllian**. ‘The **sun** melted the **wax**.’
 Atdūkaī **eeti ngaa mūnnī** cīk abiri. ‘A **man** threw a **woman fruit** that was ripe.’

The following are other examples of nouns:

Laarim Nouns		
Singular	Plural	
et	eeta	‘man, person’
yaang	ōyaangi	‘mother’
gōōla	gooliok	‘path, road’
ciith	ciithi	‘house’
kēēta	kēēna	‘tree’
ēēth	ēētha	‘goat’
ahaat	ahaatua	‘tongue’
ōngōl	ōngōlua	‘elephant’
puuta	puutanya	‘handkerchief’
tdool	tdoolua	‘vase’
ririwac	ririwanina	‘shadow, spirit’
ulua	uluayok	‘funeral’
ūllūa	ūllūanya	‘sorrow’

Usually a noun has two forms. For example, **et** ‘man, person’ is the singular form used for one man, and **eeta** ‘men’ is the plural form used for more than one man.

There are three ways that nouns have singular and plural forms. They can add suffixes to the singular form as in **minigit** ‘spirit’ and **yayanoc** ‘porcupine’. They can add suffixes to the plural form as in **balangua** ‘salt’ and **lōgōrēēta** ‘snail’. They can also add suffixes

in both singular and plural forms as in **boronit**, **boronua** ‘gazelle’ and **gurmalo**c****, **gurmaleeta** ‘nail’.

Three ways for noun plural formation

	Singular suffix	Root	Plural suffix	
-it/	mining it	mining		‘spirit, ghost’
-oc/	yayan oc	yayan		‘porcupine’
/-ua		balang	balang ua	‘salt’
/-ēta		lōgōr	lōgōr ēta	‘snail’
-it/-ua	boron it	boron-	boron ua	‘gazelle’
-oc/-ēta	gurmalo c	gurmalo-	gurmalo ēta	‘nail’

The following are the most common singular suffixes.

Singular noun suffixes

	Singular	Plural	
-it/	aween it	awēēna	‘rat’
-c/	kavūrē ēc	kavūrēē	‘feather’
-oc/	munyuny oc	munyuny	‘star’
-nit/	cuuden it	cuude	‘twin’
-eec/	doolec	dōōlī	‘child’
-tōt/	īmat ōt	īma	‘hair’
-īt/	kēlēg īt	kēlēgē	‘animal’
-nanīt/	buurnan īt	buuru	‘egg’
-n/	otoon	otoo	‘horn’

The following are the most common plural suffixes.

Plural noun suffixes

/-ua	ahaat	ahaat ua	‘tongue’
/-eeta	alaan	alaane eta	‘chief’
/-nya	ūllūa	ūllūa nya	‘sorrow’
/-iok	baath	baathi ok	‘desert’
/-i	buweec	buweeci	‘girl’
/-ēēn	kītō	kītē ēn	‘scorpion’
/-eena	mana	mane eena	‘farm, field’
/-ta	tēlēī	tēlēī ta	‘stick’
/-īt	dōōng	dōōng īt	‘arrow’
/-e	laamuc	laamu ce	‘lace of sandal’
/-ti	kūthūng	kuthung ti	‘knee’
/-og-	gōtōōna	gōtōōn ōga	‘my/our brother’

Singular nouns with suffixes

Nouns can be put into groups according to their singular or plural suffixes. For example,

all the nouns below have the suffix **-it** in the singular form. When a plural form such as **bekciok** ‘gourd’ ends in **k**, the **k** disappears in the singular form **bekcioit**.

-it/--

<u>Singular</u>	<u>Plural</u>	
aween it	awēēna	‘rat’
kiron it	kīrōnga	‘fly’
thii it ³	thīik	‘iron’
logureen it	logureen	‘insect’
rabac it	rabaco	‘bench’
bekcio it	bekciok	‘gourd’
boyio it	boyiok	‘orphan’
ellio it	elliok	‘helper, savior’
goryia it	goryiak	‘thief’
moryia it	moryiak	‘sick person’
rubenia it	rubeniak	‘blindness’
miro it	mīrōk	‘enemy’
vallai it	vallak	‘claw’

The nouns below have various other suffixes in the singular form.

-oc/--

<u>Singular</u>	<u>Plural</u>	
munyuny oc	munyuny	‘star’
baar oc [baaroc]	baarō	‘rope’
lootor oc [lootoroc]	lōōtōrō	‘ant’
nabool oc	nabōōlō	‘banana’
kavut oc	kavuto	‘wing’
ketel oc	ketelu	‘bed bug’

-eec/--

doolec	dōōlī	‘child’
loteec	lōtē	‘honey’
kebereec	kēbērē	‘eye’
mureec	mūrē	‘fat, oil’

-c/--

kavūrēec	kavūrēē	‘feather’
kūlūktēec	kūlūktēē	‘intestine’
thigireec	thigiree	‘donkey’
ūngwēec	ūngwēē	‘nose’
thooc	thoo	‘foot, leg’
kībaalīc	kībaalī	‘bird’

-īt/--

³ Check for **thiit** instead of **thiihit**.

kêlêgīt caavīt taliibanīt	kêlêgē caava taliibane	‘animal’ ‘shoe, thong’ ‘branch’
-nit/-- cuudenit kartenit [karteenit] kulutanit [kulutaanit] tholomonit kutdenit [kutdeenit] tubenit [tubeenit] ruceenit	cuude kartē kuluta thōlōmō kutde tūbē rucee	‘twin’ ‘grass’ ‘worm’ ‘charcoal’ ‘palm tree’ ‘repeated wound’ ‘skin’
-anīt/-- cōōlanīt kagūranīt [kagūraanīt]	cōōlō kagūra	‘dung (from animals)’ ‘pebble’
-īnīt/-- gaalīnīt [gaalīinīt] kathaacīnīt talīnīt [taliinīt]	gaala kathaac tali	‘official’ ‘sand’ ‘joy’
-tōt/-- īmatōt īnyatōt	īma īnya	‘hair’ ‘louse (bird type)’
-n/-- otoon nyion amēēn athan	otoo nyio amēē atha	‘horn’ ‘lamb’ ‘bone’ ‘thigh’

Plural nouns with suffixes

All the nouns below have the suffix **-ua** in the plural form.

--/ua		
<u>Singular</u>	<u>Plural</u>	
ahaat	ahaatua	‘tongue’
balang	balangua	‘salt’
bōwōl	bōwōlua	‘tortoise’
būlūc	būlūcua	‘lake, pond’
cīth	cīthua	‘dikdik’
dowom	dowomua	‘adze’
kodob	kodobua	‘vulture’
kōrtōn	kōrtōnua	‘ant hill’

nyēgēr	nyēgērua	‘fruit’
look	loowua	‘grave, hole’
vatik	vatiwua	‘fishing stick’
maaca	maacua	‘husband’
kidoci	kidocua	‘hammer’

All the nouns below have the suffix **-nya** in the plural form.

--/-nya

<u>Singular</u>	<u>Plural</u>	
awuthit	awuthitnya	‘life, situation’
tūwūlūc	tūwūlūcnya	‘chicken’
duknyamadal	duknyamadalnya	‘secretary bird’
kēēlang	kēēlangnya	‘leopard’
thiir	thiirnya	‘mountain, hill’
kurre	kurrenya	‘dove’
keewu	keewunya	‘spectacled weaver (bird type)’
ballo	ballonya	‘dove’
dīla	dīlanya	‘spear’
guo	guonya	‘fire’
nyaapō	nyaapōnya	‘rabbit, hare’
kau	kaunya	‘father-in-law’
nyegutia	nyegutianya	‘whip’
ōlē	ōlēnya	‘bull’
thaa	thaanya	‘watch, clock’

The nouns below have the suffix **-eeta** in the plural form. When the suffix is attached to nouns with heavy vowels or with vowel **a**, it has heavy vowels **-eeta**.

--/-eeta

<u>Singular</u>	<u>Plural</u>	
alaan	alaaneeta	‘chief’
maacad	maacadeeta	‘hatchet, machete, ponga’
naarab	naarabeeta	‘rock’
kovowol	kovowoleeta	‘canoe’
talara	talareeta	‘porridge (light)’
ngumngumu	ngumngumeeta	‘owl’
logoro	logoreeta	‘gourd’
kidori	kidoreeta	‘lyre’
rii	riieeta [riieta]	‘shadow’
tuggu	tuggueeta	‘shelter’

When the suffix is attached to nouns with light vowels, it has light vowels **-ēēta**.

--/-ēēta

nyabōkōny	nyabōkōnyēēta	‘chin’
-----------	---------------	--------

lõðrõn	lõðrõnēēta	‘rope’
katūk	katūgēēta	‘door’
kalaaya	kalaayēēta [kalaayēta]	‘bowl’
ūbūnī	ūbūnēēta	‘bread’
nyēlērõ	nyēlērēēta	‘spear (for decoration)’

The nouns below have various other suffixes in the plural form.

--/-iok

baath	baathiok	‘desert’
geen	geeniok	‘life, food’
looc	loociok	‘land, earth’
mõðrīth	moorithiok	‘sickness’
ngõðt	ngootiok	‘wind, breath’
wathīn	wathiniok	‘day’
buul	buuliok	‘eating place’
gõðla	gooliok	‘path, road’
kõrðõk	korookjok	‘village, compound’
muwur	muwuryok	‘darkness’
thiir	thiiryok	‘mountain, hill’
kõr	koryok	‘day’
thaara	thaaryok	‘name’
ulua	uluayok	‘funeral’

--/-oniok

thõðth	thoothoniok	‘word, matter, situation’
bõðnõ	boononiok	‘woods, forest’

--/-i

buweec	buweeci	‘girl’
ciith	ciithi	‘house’
bowuc	bowuci	‘back’
ngaa	ngaa	‘woman’
kurtha	kurthi	‘dog’
kuula	kuuli	‘tail’

--/-ēēn

kītõ	kītēēn	‘scorpion’
mērtē	mērtēēn	‘beer’
duwwo	duwwēēn	‘well, water source’
bulo	bulēēn	‘porridge (thick)’
kalli	kalliēēn [kalliēn]	‘whip’
tīī	tīīyēēn	‘crown’
bīī	bīīyēēn	‘stone’

--/-eena

mana tammu	maneena tammueena	‘farm, field’ ‘rain’
--/-ta		
tēlēī maa kōrrōōnī	tēlēīta maata kōrrōōnīta	‘stick’ ‘lion’ ‘gourd type’
--/-ti		
kūthūng nguuma ⁴ kēēnga ⁵ iinyia	kuthungti nguumti keengti iinyiati	‘knee’ ‘face, forehead’ ‘belly, stomach’ ‘neck’
--/-eti		
kūtūk	kutugeti	‘mouth’
--/-a		
kaal amut eet ēēth	kaala amuta eeta ēētha	‘thing’ ‘saliva’ ‘man, person’ ‘goat’
--/-īna		
laata diati	laaīna diaīna	‘soaked maize flour’ ‘vegetable’
--/-e		
lōtarac lōfīric laamuc nyiiok	lōtaraje lōfīrije laamuce nyiiowe	‘mat’ ‘spear, small hoe’ ‘lace of sandal or shoe’ ‘month’
--/-og, -ogo, -ogi (the vowels can be heavy or light)		
gōtōōna ngōōnī, ngōōna ngōōnīyaatīnī gōōnī	gōtōōnōga ngōōnōgī, ngōōnōga ngōōnōgīyaatīnī gōōnōgī	‘my/our brother’ ‘sister’ ‘aunt (mother’s sister)’ ‘friend, companion’
--/-īt		
dōōng laan nyarrang	dōōngīt laanīt nyarrangīt	‘arrow’ ‘arrow’ ‘arrow’

⁴ Check if **a** in **nguuma** is a location marker

⁵ Check if **a** in **kēēnga** is a location marker

--/-tit		
iinyo	iinyotit	‘liver’
iiyo	iiyotit	‘chest’

Singular and plural nouns with suffixes

In some nouns, both the singular and plural forms have suffixes. For example, the nouns below have the suffix **-t** in the singular form and the suffix **-nya** in the plural form.

-t/-nya		
<u>Singular</u>	<u>Plural</u>	
doomat	doomanya	‘pile of soil’
ngõðwēt	ngõðwēnya	‘warthog’
nyerumat	nyerumanya	‘spear type’
nyetubat	nyetubanya	‘sword’
erkit	erkinya	‘year’
kuwaat	kuwaanya	‘snake’

The nouns below have various other suffixes in the singular and plural forms.

-c/-nya		
thobiac	thobianya	‘box’
porovetaac	porovetaanya	‘prophet (bw: English)’
kaakwac	kaakwanya	‘new wound’

-oc/-nya		
babuthoc	babuthnya	‘prisoner’
tujaroc	tujarnya	‘merchant’ (bw: Arabic)

-c, -t/-nine		
kabicoc	kabiconine	‘clan, kingdom’
koliac	kolianine	‘garden tool’
duarac	duaranine	‘valley’
lõgõrac	lõgõranĩnē	‘sweet ant’
gērnaat	gērnaanine	‘medicine’

Other singular and plural changes

The nouns below have other suffixes or changes between singular and plural forms not yet mentioned.

Miscellaneous other singular and plural suffixes or changes

<u>Singular</u>	<u>Plural</u>	
tiic	tiicane	‘work’
kaal	kaalyange	‘group of animals’
logoo	lõgõðõth	‘young man’

joree	joreen ina	‘war’
laajo	laajeen ina	‘hail’
yuwuthi	yuwuthon	‘rest’
vōlōng	volong nyio k	‘lie’
baal	baalini ok	‘night’
taaba	taab ita	‘throne, chair, stool’
ēlē	ele eti	‘body’
bōōcīlīlōc	bōōcīlīl	‘mushroom’
loceeri woc	loceeri	‘maize’
ngiceker woc	ngīcēkēr	‘soldier’
burac oc	bura	‘seed of tree’
kiding	kidi	‘meat’
kween	kwa	‘leather mat’
nyīgī at	nyīgīt	‘tooth’
juat at	jua	‘excrement (human)’
laabit ot	laabi	‘grain’
billē t	billā	‘thorn’
balō it	ballōk	‘leaf’
boron it	boron ua	‘gazelle’
kulug oc	kulug ua	‘fish’
athi it	ath ina	‘hand’
kēth it	kēth in	‘breast’
tīthē t	tīthē ēnīnē	‘ash’
bōrē	bōr in	‘shed’
dabdab oc	dabdab en	‘bat’
gurmalo c	gurmale eta	‘nail’
ahat	ahe enin	‘food’
kēē ta	kēē na	‘tree’
nyarobi ac	nyarobi nya	‘money’
thīn in	thin ieti	‘heart’
tagōō n	tagōō ta	‘giraffe’
kēgēr naat	kēgēr ō	‘root, herb’
athe t	ath aa	‘sheep’
burn anit	buur u	‘egg’
nyeter anit	nyeter ak	‘bridegroom’
thoot ot	thōw ō	‘coconut tree’
borowe ec	bōrōwē ēnīna	‘thunder’
ririw ac	ririwan ina	‘spirit’
mōōl ēt	maala	‘calf’
kī tat	kī ina	‘ear’
baang	baaj iga	‘father’
baatīn ī	baaj igi	‘owner, father’
codoido	dodoy e	‘piece’
dūwū c	dūū cē	‘gourd bowl’

kilib	kiben	‘shield’
ngĩtĩ	vatik	‘place’
tanga	tĩĩna	‘cow’
õwa	oti	‘head’
nyime	kanyime	‘sesame’
pũrũcẽ	upurucie	‘clothing’
yaang	õyaangi	‘mother’
bang	õbangi	‘ancestor’

Nouns with one form

The nouns below have only one form.

Nouns with only one form

aadi	‘puzzle, miracle’
kadihithi	‘praise’
ngitivori	‘outside’
tdur	‘sound of dancing’
ngaamon	‘madness’
teediak	‘remnant, remaining’
anyiinĩt	‘gift, sacrifice, money’
bũlẽnĩt	‘glory’
lawiinĩt	‘prayer’
tedinet	‘harvest’
rũgẽt	‘life’
ngereniet	‘morning’
keebinet	‘counting, numbering’
kõr	‘sun’
ngẽrĩnĩ	‘son’
burki	‘secret, hidden place’
ii	‘sun’
gii	‘thing’
gimma	‘anything, something’
õlõõ	‘family, compound’
tammutidiin	‘sky’
nyii lok	‘moon’
Nyekuc	‘God’
nyekucnya	‘false god’
biyie	‘blood’
ĩra	‘milk’
maam	‘water’
mothinit	‘grief’
nyimeenit	‘paste from sesame’
waawa	‘intestine’

Exercise 2

In the following sentences, underline all nouns. Do not underline any words that are not nouns. Underline a word once if it is a singular noun. Underline a word twice if it is a plural noun.

Alangan kōr otoo cīgīnīk.	‘The sun melted his horns.’
Adaak kēlēgē kidi.	‘The animals ate meat.’
Ūdūktīak eeta kēlēgē cīk obbitik, . . .	‘The people told the big animals, . . .’
Avva balna makayyioiti gōdnōgī.	‘The big man was calling the guests.’
Īcīn ngaa ĩmma et coo.	‘A certain woman saw this man.’

Relational Nouns

A few nouns show possession by adding a suffix to the noun. For example, **ngōōna** ‘my sister’, **ngoonu** ‘your(sg) sister’, **ngōōnī** ‘his/their sister’, **ngooniet** ‘our/your(pl) sister’ have the suffixes **-a**, **-u**, **-ī**, **-iet**. The plural words **ngōōnōga**, **ngoonogu**, **ngōōnōgī**, **ngoonogiet** also have these suffixes, but first have the plural suffix **-og**. The combined suffixes are **-ōga**, **-ogu**, **-ōgī**, **-ogiet**.

The nouns below also have these suffixes to show possession. All the words describe a relationship between people and are call relational nouns.

na ‘my’	niia ‘your (sg)’	nē ‘his/her’	naaga ‘our’	niigia ‘your (pl)’	nēēgē ‘their’	
ngōōna	ngoonu	ngōōnī	ngooniet	ngooniet	ngōōnī	‘sister’
ngōōnōga	ngoonogu	ngōōnōgī	ngoonogiet	ngoonogiet	ngōōnōgī	‘sisters’
gōtōōna	gotoonu	gōtōōnī	gotooniet	gotooniet	gōtōōnī	‘brother’
gōtōōnōga	gotoonogu	gōtōōnōgī	gotoonogiet	gotoonogiet	gōtōōnōgī	‘brothers’
nyīgarna	nyigarnu	nyīgarnī	nyigarniet	nyigarniet	nyīgarnī	‘co-wife’
nyīgarnōga	nyigarnogu	nyīgarnōgī	nyigarnogiet	nyigarnogiet	nyīgarnōgī	‘co-wives’
gōōna	goonu	gōōnī	gooniet	gooniet	gōōnī	‘friend’
gōōnōga	goonogu	gōōnōgī	goonogiet	goonogiet	gōōnōgī	‘friends’
midingna	midingnu	midingni	midingniet	midingniet	midingni	‘mother’s
midigooga	midigoogu	midigoogi	midigoogiet	midigoogiet	midigoogi	cousin(s)’

The relational nouns below have the singular suffixes **-ani**, **-uni**, **-ini**, **-iniet**.

na	niia	nē	naaga	niigia	nēēgē	
moonani	moonuni	moonini	mooniniet	mooniniet	moonini	‘husband’s
moonoga	moonogu	moonogi	moonogiet	moonogiet	moonogi	sister(s)’
ngerani	ngeruni	ngerini	ngeriniet	ngeriniet	ngerini	‘son’

buwenyani buwenyuni buwegigi buwegigiet buwegigiet buwegigi ‘daughter’

The relational nouns below have other suffixes to show possession.

na	niia	nē	naaga	niigia	nēēgē	
yaang	yaaya	yaatinnī	yaanyiet	yaaya	yaatinnī	‘mother’
ngaagiet	ngaagu	ngaagī	ngaagiet	ngaagu	ngaagī	‘mothers’
baang	baaba	baatinnī	baangiet	baaba	baatinnī	‘father’
baajiga	baajigu	baajigi	baajigiet	baajigu	baajigi	‘fathers’
maama	maalotunni	maalotinnī	maaliyet	maalotunni	maalotinnī	‘mother’s
maalōga	maalogiet	maalōgī	maalogiet	maalogiet	maalōgī	brother(s)’
ngōōnī-	ngōōnī-	ngōōnī-	ngōōnī-	ngōōnī-	ngōōnī-	‘mother’s
yaang	yaaya	yaatinnī	yaangiet	yaaya	yaatinnī	sister’
ngōōnōgī-	ngōōnōgī-	ngōōnōgī-	ngōōnōgī-	ngōōnōgī-	ngōōnōgī-	‘mother’s
yaang	yaaya	yaatinnī	yaangiet	yaaya	yaatinnī	sisters’

Exercise 3

In the clauses below, underline each noun. Then circle each relational noun.

- Ma thī ngaa coo ēnnēk gōōnī ne, ‘And then the woman told her friend, ‘
- ivitia nyīgarnogī doolec etevetieet agēēta ‘Her step-mothers come, the children
kwaā, laydown skin mats for us’
- kanyama na kuuwa īcī baatinnī ‘I come, going to her father’
- ma katina iinya īcīk elemā yaatinnī ‘and then (according to the the number
of) days to which her mother agrees’
- ēnnēk nyaapō gōōnōgī ne, ‘the hare told his friends, ‘

Verbs

A verb describes an action, motion, state, change, or can be used as an equal sign between two or more words. For example, **adaak** ‘bit’ and **atdūkai** ‘threw’ are verbs in the following sentences. They describe the action that took place.

- Adaak** kūthūūtha ngaa. ‘A black ant **bit** the woman.’
- Atdūkai** eeti īnōōnō mūnnī cīk abiri. ‘A man **threw** to her fruit that was ripe.’

The following are other examples of verbs:

Laarim Verbs	
adim	‘took’
ecebek	‘tied’

ēnnēk	‘told, said’
ũūk	‘went’
ivir	‘ran’
acīnī	‘saw’
avu	‘stayed’
ayak	‘have’
alangan	‘melted’
anyakcie	‘became pregnant’
ongollingce	‘became white’
balna	‘have, was’
ēēn	‘was, is’

A verb can have more than one form. For example, **idim**, **adim**, **idima**, and **adima** have slightly different meaning, as shown in the sentences below. They are different forms of the same verb.

Verb forms

<u>I</u>dim eeti dōllīan.	‘Man took wax.’
<u>A</u>dim eeti dōllīan.	‘Man <u>just now</u> took wax.’
<u>A</u>dim <u>koccia</u> eeti dōllīan.	‘Man <u>will</u> take wax.’
<u>A</u>dim <u>kafī</u> eeti dōllīan.	‘Man <u>may</u> take wax.’
<u>I</u>dima eeti dōllīan.	‘Man took wax.’ (The speaker is telling what he <u>heard</u>)
<u>A</u>dima eeti dōllīan.	‘Man took wax.’ (The speaker is telling what he <u>saw</u>)

The verb **idim** ‘took’ is called a completive verb. The action is thought of as being complete. A prefix **-i** with the same vowel as in the verb attaches to completive verbs. The verb **adim** ‘takes’ is called an incompletive verb. The action is thought of as still going on. A prefix **-a** attaches to some incompletive verbs. In later lessons, we will talk more about these verb forms.

Exercise 4

In the following sentences, underline all verbs. Do not underline any words that are not verbs.

Alangan kōr otoo cīgīnīk.	‘The sun melted his horns.’
Avu ngaa īmma īthōng ũūk kartēnnēi baatha.	‘Woman went for grass in bush.’
Ūdūktīak eeta kēlēgē cīk obbitik, . . .	‘The people told the big animals, . . .’
Avva balna makayyioiti gōdnōgī.	‘The big man was calling the guests.’
Īcīn ngaa īmma et coo.	‘A certain woman saw this man.’
Avī balna eeti imma īthōng otod kēēta,	‘There was a certain person who

climbed a tree.’

Clauses and Sentences

Now that we have learned about three different kinds of words, we will begin learning about how the words go together.

A clause is a group of words with one verb. A sentence has one or more clauses. Each line below is a clause, since each line has one verb. The five lines together make two sentences, each with a period (.) at the end.

Avu ngaa
ĩthõng ĩcĩn et ĩmma.
Ngaatĩ acĩnĩ,
itik et coo
uwi ciitha cĩnnĩ ĩcĩtõ.

There was the woman
and saw a certain man.
When she saw him,
she carried this man
(and) took him inside her house.

Some of the clauses above can stand alone as a sentence. For example the last line, **uwi ciitha cĩnnĩ ĩcĩtõ** ‘she took him inside her house’, can stand alone as a sentence. But the third line, **ngaatĩ acĩnĩ** ‘when she saw him’, cannot stand alone as a sentence.

A phrase can be a group of words without a verb. For example, the following are phrases since they do not have verbs.

et ĩmma
ciitha cĩnnĩ ĩcĩtõ

‘a certain man’
‘inside her house’

Exercise 5

In the following lines, underline all verbs. Then, in the blank ___ on the left, write ‘S’ if the line can stand alone as a *sentence*. Write ‘C’ if the line can only be called a *clause*. Write ‘P’ if the line can only be called a *phrase*.

___	iliba nyaapõ	the hare came out
___	ngaatĩ athikni kabbĩrrẽna belinit coo wo	when the wasps heard this singing
___	kẽẽt ĩmma	certain tree
___	ma thĩ ngĩ arũgũm kabbĩrrẽna wo	and then when the ants were dancing
___	kõr cobbi	big day
___	adaak kẽnnẽ kũthũũtha ngaa coo	the black ant bit the woman
___	rũgũmõn cobbi gimma nõkõ	very big dance

Punctuation Rules

Punctuation is the way of marking sentences and clauses in writing. The following sentence has been marked with correct punctuation:

Avu ngaa	There was a woman
ĩthõng ĩcĩn et ĩmma.	and she saw a certain person.
Ngaatĩ acĩnĩ,	When she saw him,
itik et coo	she carried this person
ẽcẽbẽk et coo karteenta ĩcĩtõ,	tied this person inside grass,
kĩ kuui õlõõ.	and took him home.

The following are some important rules of punctuation. An example from the sentence above is given after each rule.

Punctuation Rules for Clauses and Sentences

- *The first word in a sentence must have a capital (large) letter.* For example, the word **Avu** begins with a capital **A**.
- *There must be a period (.) (full stop) at the end of a sentence.* For example, there is a period (.) after the word **õlõõ**.
- *There must be a comma (,) at the end of a clause when there is a pause.* For example, there is a pause after the fifth line above (**ẽcẽbẽk et coo karteenta ĩcĩtõ**,) before continuing with the rest of the sentence. So, a comma is placed after **ĩcĩtõ**.
- *There must be a comma at the end of a clause having the connector **ngaatĩ** ‘when’, **mĩ** ‘when/if’, or **ngĩ** ‘when/if’.* For example, the word **ngaatĩ** begins the third line, so there must be a comma at the end of the clause following the word **acĩnĩ**.

Exercise 6

In the following lines that go together, underline all verbs. Then circle the first letter of each new sentence that should be a capital. Put a period after the last word in each sentence. If you find the word **ngaatĩ**, **mĩ**, or **ngĩ**, draw a box around it. Put commas where needed. Do not put any commas, periods or capital letters where they are not required.

kẽẽta coo avĩ eeti tidiina	this was the tree in which the person was sitting
cĩ ẽẽn dõtĩt	who was a man
ma thĩ balna eeti coo	and then the man was
mĩ acĩn ngaa coo wo	when he saw this woman

atdūkaĩ gōđ ãñđñđ mũnnĩ cĩk abiri	he threw her some ripe fruit
ēbēra thĩgō ngaa coo	the woman took it
ēbēra thĩgō ngaa coo	the woman took it
adũĩ	ate it

Common Word Order in Clauses

Every clause has one verb. Some clauses also have a subject and object. A verb is the word that describes the *action*. A subject is the word for the *doer* of the action. And an object is the word for the *receiver* of the action. All three are in the following clause:

Adaak	kũthũtha	ngaa.	‘A black ant bit the woman.’
Verb	Subject	Object	

Laarim word order is usually the same as in this clause, namely verb, subject, object.

Common Word Order Rule

About 80% of the time (in stories), clauses have the word order
Verb – Subject – Object

Exercise 7

In the following sentences, underline the verb, draw a circle around the subject, and draw a box around the object.

Alangan kōr dōllĩan.	‘The sun melted the wax.’
Adaak kēlēgē kidi.	‘The animals ate meat.’
Ūdũktĩak eeta kēlēgē cĩk obbitik, . . .	‘The people told the big animals, . . .’
Avva balna makayyioiti gōđñđgĩ.	‘The big man was calling the guests.’
Atdũkaĩ eeti mũnnĩ cĩk abiri.	‘A man threw fruit that was ripe.’

Case suffixes

In the next few lessons, we look at case suffixes. These are markers on nouns which show what the noun is doing in the clause. Different case suffixes attach to singular nouns than to plural nouns. Also, different suffixes attach to nouns with final consonants than to nouns with final vowels. In the following chart, the suffixes **-i**, **-a**, **-o**, **-ak** attach to the singular noun **bēlēth** ‘window’ with final consonant. The suffixes **-wa**, **-wo**, **-wak** attach to the singular noun **dĩla** ‘spear’ with final vowel.

Case suffixes on singular nouns

	Object Singular	Object Plural	Subject Singular	Location Singular	Possession Singular	Possession Plural	
Final consonant	bĕlēth	(bĕlēthua)	-i bĕlēthi	-a bĕlētha	-o bĕlētho	-ak bĕlēthak	‘window’
Final vowel	dĭla	(dĭlanya)	dĭla	-wa dĭlawā	-wo dĭlawo	-wak dĭlawak	‘spear’

The suffixes **-a**, **-ei**, **-u** attach to the plural noun **mĭrōk** ‘enemy’ with final consonant.
The suffixes **-na**, **-nei**, **-nu** attach to the plural noun **kinyo** ‘pipe’ with final vowel.

Case suffixes on plural nouns

	Object Singular	Object Plural	Subject Singular	Location Singular	Possession Singular	
Final consonant	(miroĭt)	mĭrōk	-a mĭrōwa	-ei mĭrōwei	-u mĭrōwu	‘enemy’
Final vowel	(kinyoc)	kinyo	-na kinyona	-nei kinyonei	-nu kinyonu	‘pipe’

Subject Markers (Nominative Case)

In this lesson, we learn that the suffix **-i** or a tone change can show that a singular noun is the subject. The suffixes **-a**, **-na** or a tone change show that a plural noun is the subject. These suffixes mark words as subjects and are called subject markers.

Singular subject suffix -i

In sentence (1), the most common form of the noun **et** ‘man’ is used. In this sentence, **et** is the object—the receiver of the action.

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| (1) Īcĭn ngaa <u>et</u> coo. | ‘A woman saw this <u>man</u> .’ |
| (2) Īcĭn <u>eeti</u> coo ngaa ĩmma. | ‘This <u>man</u> saw a certain woman.’ |
| (3) Avĭ <u>eeti</u> bolowath. | ‘There was a <u>man</u> yesterday.’ |

When a singular noun is used as the subject, a marker is added. In (2) and (3), **eeti** ‘man’ is a subject—the doer of the action. So, the singular subject marker -i is added.

The following nouns can take the place of **eeti** in sentence (3) and have the singular subject marker **-i**. A few nouns such as **ōlē** ‘bull’ have the subject marker suffix **-ia**.

Singular suffixes	Object singular (Accusative)	Subject singular (Nominative)
------------------------------	---	--

	et [H]	eeti	‘man’
	bōwōl	bōwōli	‘tortoise’
	cīth	cīthi	‘dikdik’
	kodob	kodobi	‘vulture’
	kēēlang	kēēlangi	‘leopard’
	padir	padiri	‘priest’
	alaan	alaani	‘chief’
	maacad	maacadi	‘machete’
	nyabōkōny	nyabōkōnyi	‘chin’
	ngōōt	ngōōti	‘wind, breath’
	kau	kawi	‘father-in-law’
	kōrōōk	kōrōōgi	‘compound’
	molok	molowi	‘voice’
	ōlē	ōlia	‘bull’
-it/	miroit	miroiti	‘enemy’
-c/	madooc	madooci	‘poisin’
-oc/	girococ	girococi	‘cockroach’
-nit/	tiyoonit	tiyoonti	‘tree type’
-eec/	loteec	loteeci	‘honey’
-tōt/	laabitot	laabitoti	‘grain’
-īt/	caavīt	caavīti	‘shoe’
-nanīt/	buurnanīt	buurnanti	‘egg’
-n/	athan	athani	‘thigh’

Plural subject suffixes –a, -na

In (4), **kūthūūth** ‘black ants’ is the object—the receiver of the action. The common form of the noun is used.

- (4) Adaaq ngaa coo kūthūūth. ‘The woman ate black ants.’
 (5) Adaaq kūthūūtha ngaa coo. ‘Black ants bit the woman.’
 (6) Aati kūthūūtha bolowath. ‘There were ants yesterday.’

In (5) and (6), **kūthūūtha** ‘black ants’ is the subject, doing the action. This time the plural subject marker **-a** is added.

The following nouns can take the place of **kūthūūtha** in sentence (6) and have the plural subject marker **-a** or **-na**. The suffix **-a** follows a consonant and the suffix **-na** follows a vowel. A few plural nouns have the subject marker **-i**.

Plural suffix	Object plural (Accusative)	Subject plural (Nominative)	
	eet [L]	eeta [L,L]	‘men’
	munyuny	munyunya	‘star’
	ruguang	ruguanga	‘coconut meat’
	nyeterak	nyeteraha	‘bride, groom’

	yayan	yayana	‘porcupine’
	laabi	laabina	‘grain’
	teeva	teevai	‘tree type’
	buuwo	buuwoi	‘tree type’
	kũūrũ	kũūrũna	‘tendon’
/-ua	bēlēthua	bēlēthuana	‘window’
/-eet	ngareet	ngareeta	‘healer’
/-nya	dīlanya	dīlanya	‘spear’
/-iok	geeniok	geeniowa	‘food, life’
/-i	mīrkīci	mīrkīcina	‘male sheep’
/-ēēn	bulēēn	bulēēna	‘porridge’
/-een	tūūreen	tūūreena	‘gun’
/-t	lobelet	lobeleta	‘bed’
/-īt	nyarrangīt	nyarrangīta	‘arrow’
/-e	kurrece	kurrecena	‘monkey’
/-ti	ibaati	ibaatina	‘upper arm’
/-og-	gōtōōnōga	gōtōōnōga	‘our brother’

The word **et** ‘person, man’ when said by itself or as an object (receiver of action) has one **e**. Otherwise it has two **ee** as in **eeti** ‘person, man (subject)’. The word **eet** ‘people’ always has two **ee**.⁶

Īcīn ngaa ĩmma **et** coo. A certain woman saw this **person**.
 Īcīn ngaa ĩmma **eet** ciko. A certain woman saw these **people**.
 Īcīn **eeti** coo maa ĩmma. This **person** saw a certain lion.
 Īcīnīt **eeta** ciko maa ĩmma. These **people** saw a certain lion.

Singular and plural subject tone changes

On some nouns, the only way of showing the noun is a subject is with a difference in tone. Tone is the difference in pitch, or how high or low the word sounds. Listen for a difference in tone on **maa** ‘lion’ in sentence (7) and on **maa** in sentence (8). In (7), **maa** has High [H] tone, but in (8) and (9), **maa** has Low [L] tone.

- (7) Īcīn eeti coo maa ĩmma. [H] ‘This man saw a certain lion.’
 (8) Īcīn maa et coo. [L] ‘A lion saw this man.’
 (9) Avī maa bolowath. [L] ‘There was a lion yesterday.’

The following singular nouns can take the place of **maa** in sentence (9) and only a tone change shows it is a subject. If the word has more than one syllable (beat), a comma is used to separate the tones of the syllables. For example, **kurre** [L,HL] ‘dove’ has Low tone on the first syllable **kur** and High-Low falling tone on the second syllable **re**. In the

⁶ Phonetically, the word **et** ‘person, man’ has a long vowel [eet]. In 2012, those at the Laarim Mark community check choose to write **et** ‘person, man’ with short vowel to distinguish it from the plural **eet** ‘people’ said before another word as in **eet ciko** ‘these people’ (and not before a pause or by itself as in **eeta** ‘people’).

last two words, there is no change in tone to show it is a subject.

Object singular (Accusative)		Subject singular (Nominative)		
maa	[H]	maa	[L]	‘lion’
nyion	[H]	nyion	[L]	‘lamb’
bĩĩ	[L]	bĩĩ	[H]	‘stone’
ẽlẽ	[L,L]	ẽlẽ	[H,H]	‘body’
kurre	[L,L]	kurre	[L,LH]	‘dove’
keewu	[L,L]	keewu	[L,LH]	‘bird’
ballo	[L,L]	ballo	[L,LH]	‘dove’
nyaapõ	[HL,L]	nyaapõ	[HL,LH]	‘hare’
võlõng	[H,H]	võlõng	[L,L]	‘lie’
doolec	[H,L]	doolec	[L,LH]	‘child’
mõõlõt	[H,L]	mõõlõt, mõõlõtĩ	[L,LH]	‘calf’
kũlũmĩ	[L,H,L]	kũlũmĩ, kũlũmĩa	[H,H,L]	‘ostrich’
nyepira	[H,H,L]	nyepira	[LH,H,L]	‘hippopotamus’
kuwaat	[H,H]	kuwaat	[L,LH]	‘snake’
ngumngumu	[L,L,H]	ngumngumu	[L,L,LH]	‘owl’
ulua	[L,L]	ulua, uluani	[L,L]	‘funeral’
ngaa	[H]	ngaa	[H]	‘woman, wife’

(10) Aati tũwũlũcnya bolowath. [L] ‘There were chickens yesterday.’

The following plural nouns can take the place of **tũwũlũcnya** in sentence (10) and only a tone changes shows it is a subject. The tone stays low in the plural subject noun. However, in the last three words, there is no change in tone to show it is a subject.

Object plural (Accusative)		Subject plural (Nominative)		
tũwũlũcnya	[L,L,L,LH]	tũwũlũcnya	[L,L,L,L]	‘chickens’
nyaapõnya	[L,L,H]	nyaapõnya	[L,L,L]	‘hares’
kaunya	[L,LH]	kaunya	[L,L]	‘father-in-laws’
babuthnya	[L,L,LH]	babuthnya	[L,L,L]	‘prisoners’
buweeci	[L,L,H]	buweeci	[L,L,L]	‘girls’
ngaai	[H]	ngaai	[L]	‘women, wives’
õlẽnya	[L,L,LH]	õlẽnya	[L,L,L]	‘bulls’
eleeti	[L,L,H]	eleeti	[L,L,L]	‘bodies’
kuwaanya	[L,L,H]	kuwaanya	[L,L,L]	‘snakes’
ketelu	[L,L,L]	ketelu	[L,L,L]	‘bed bugs’
thigiree	[L,L,L]	thigiree	[L,L,L]	‘donkeys’
kẽlẽgẽ	[L,L,L]	kẽlẽgẽ	[L,L,L]	‘animals’

In the following sentences, it is important to say the words **võlõng** ‘lie’ and **ẽlẽ** ‘body’ with the correct tone in order to have the correct meaning. Try to read them correctly.

(From Hare 87)
‘Ivir **võlõng** wo.’

The lie ran.

(From Hare 69)

“**Vōlōng** coo coo irot ooti.” “This lie, this you take and go with.”

(From Hare 83)

“Ūūk **vōlōng** nga?” “Where did the lie go?”

(From Hare 75)

“Kacini gii cī a **vōlōng** ngo.” “I see thing that is called lie.”

(From Hare 79)

Adima nē nyaapō **ēlē** cīnnī Hare took himself to be the lie,
kī **vōlōng** thēk kiir nē. the great lie.

(From Hare 80)

Ivir thī ūūk arannē kīdīhīme **ēlē**. He ran, showered, his body became beautiful.

Were you able to easily read with the correct tone on **vōlōng** and **ēlē**? If not, it may help to have a mark showing when the word is a subject. Subjects could have the mark ' as in **vōlōng'** and **ēlē'**. There is no marking on objects. When the reader sees ', he or she knows the word is a subject and reads with the correct tone for the word as a subject (**vōlōng'** [L,L], **ēlē'** [H,H]). When the word does not have ', he or she knows the word is an object and reads with the correct tone for the word as an object (**vōlōng** [H,H], **ēlē** [L,L]).

In the sentences below, **vōlōng'** and **ēlē'** have the subject mark ' when used as a subject.

(From Hare 87)

‘Ivir **vōlōng'** wo.’ The lie ran.

(From Hare 69)

“**Vōlōng** coo coo irot ooti.” “This lie, this you take and go with.”

(From Hare 83)

“Ūūk **vōlōng'** nga?” “Where did the lie go?”

(From Hare 75)

“Kacini gii cī a **vōlōng'** ngo.” “I see thing that is called lie.”

(From Hare 79)

Adima nē nyaapō **ēlē** cīnnī Hare took himself to be the lie,
kī **vōlōng'** thēk kiir nē. the great lie.

(From Hare 80)

Ivir thī ūūk arannē kīdīhīme **ēlē'**. He ran, showered, his body became beautiful.

Did the subject mark ' make reading easier? If so, Laarim speakers could agree to put ' on all subjects that only change in tone from objects. The mark ' is not needed on subjects like **eeti** ‘person’ which already have the subject marker **-i**. So far, there has not been a decision to mark subjects with '. So, the mark ' is not used at all in this book or in other literacy books.

Exercise 8

In the following sentences, underline all verbs, draw a circle around words with a subject marker, and draw a box around all objects.

Avva balna nē makayioiti ōngōli gōdōngī	‘The big man—the elephant—was calling his friends’
Ayakta eeta ngaapō	‘the people brought the hare’
Ikiyia kēlēgīt īmma īcīn īnōdō	‘another animal came to see him’
ennei kēnnē kabbīrrēna tuluuwu ne,	‘but the wasps said to the squirrel, ‘
Ma thī ngaa coo ennek gōdōnī ne, . . .	‘So the woman told her friend, . . .’
Ma thī mī anyakcie gōdōnīa wo, ijin gōdōnīa ennek ne,	‘And then when her friend was pregnant, her friend asked, . . .’

Location Markers (Oblique Case)

In this lesson, we learn that the suffix **-a** show that a singular noun is the location. The suffixes **-i**, **-ni**, **-ei**, **-nei** show that a plural noun is the location. These suffixes mark words as locations and are called location markers.

Singular location suffix -a

In sentence (1), **kēēt** ‘tree’ is the object—receiver of the action, and the form **kēēt** is used.

- (1) Ūūk ōdōlan ngaa coo kēēt vūrūt. ‘The woman arrived to the tree.’
 (2) Avu ngaa coo ōjōn kēēta. ‘The woman stayed near the tree.’

When a singular noun shows the location of the action, a marker is added. In (2), **kēēta** ‘tree’ is the location of the action since it is where the woman stays. So, the singular location marker -a is added.

Most of the following nouns can take the place of **kēēta** in sentence (2) and have the singular location marker **-a**. Two nouns have the location marker **-ta**.

Singular suffix	Object singular (Accusative)	Location singular (Oblique)	
	kēēt	kēēta	‘tree’
	bōwōl	bōwōla	‘tortoise’
	cīth	cītha	‘dikdik’
	kēēlang	kēēlanga	‘leopard’
	kodob	kodoba	‘vulture’
	tdulum	tduluma	‘hornbill’

	tūwūlūc	tūwūlūca	‘chicken’
	ōlē	ōlēa	‘bull’
	rii	riia	‘shadow’
	maa	maaa	‘lion’
	kurre	kurrea	‘dove’
	keewu	keewua	‘bird’
	ballo	balloa	‘dove’
	nyaapō	nyaapōa	‘hare’
	nyepira	nyepiraa	‘hippopotamus’
	ngumngumu	ngumngumua	‘owl’
	kau	kawa	‘father-in-law’
	ēlē	ēla ⁷	‘body’
	kūlūmī	kūlūma ⁸	‘ostrich’
	molok	molowa	‘voice’
	ulua	uluana ⁹	‘funeral’
	ngaa	ngaawa ¹⁰	‘woman, wife’
	kītō	kītōwa ¹¹	‘scorpion’
	bīī	bīīya ¹²	‘stone’
	boyioit	boyiokta ¹³	‘orphan’
	goryiait	goryiakta ¹⁴	‘thief’
-it/	miroit	mirokta	‘enemy’
-c/	madooc	madooca	‘poison’
-oc/	girococ	girococa	‘cockroach’
-nit/	tiyoonit	tiyoonta	‘tree type’
-eec/	loteec	loteeca	‘honey’
-tōt/	laabitot	laabitota	‘grain’
-īt/	caavīt	caavīta	‘shoe’
-nanīt/	buurnanīt	buurnanta	‘egg’
-n/	athan	athana	‘thigh’

Some names of places have the location suffix **-tiy** as in *Ethiopia 1-2*.

(Ethiopia 1-2)

Īthōng ullucciak Mogila. And came down to Mogila.
Ma balna mi abaito Mogilatiy, . . . Then when they stayed at Mogila, . . .

Plural location suffixes **-i**, **-ni**, **-ei**, **-nei**

In sentence (3), **kaunya** ‘mother-in-laws’ is the object—receiver of the action, and the

⁷ Check for **ēlēa**, similar to **ōlēa**

⁸ Check for **kūlūmīa**, similar to **riia**

⁹ Check for **uluua**, similar to **maaa**

¹⁰ Check for **ngaaa**, similar to **maaa**

¹¹ Check for **kītōa**, similar to **nyaapōa**

¹² Check for **bīīa**, similar to **riia**

¹³ Comes from the accusative plural form **boyiok**

¹⁴ Comes from the accusative plural form **goryiak**

form **kaunya** is used.

- (3) Ūūk ðdōlan ngaa coo kaunya. ‘The woman arrived to mother-in-laws.’
 (4) Avu ngaa coo ðjððn kaunyai. ‘The woman stayed near mother-in-laws.’

When a plural noun shows the location of the action, a marker is added. In (4), **kaunyai** is the location of the action since it is where the woman stays. So, the plural location marker -i is added.

Most of the following nouns can take the place of **kaunyai** in sentence (4) and take one the plural location markers **-ei**, **-nei**. The suffix **-ei** follows a consonant and the suffix **-nei** follows a vowel. A few nouns take the location markers **-i**, **-ni**, or **-iy**.

Plural suffix	Object plural (Accusative)	Location plural (Oblique)	
	kaunya	kaunyai	‘mother-in-law’
	munyuny	munyunyei	‘star’
	ruguang	ruguangei	‘coconut meat’
	varany	varanyei	‘palm branch’
	nyeterak	nyeteraei	‘bride, groom’
	yayan	yayanei	‘porcupine’
	laabi	laabinei	‘grain’
	teeva	teevanei	‘tree type’
	buuwo	buuwonei	‘tree type’
	kūūrū	kūūrūnei	‘tendon’
	ciili	ciilinei	‘star type’
	maam	maamiy	‘water’
/-ua	bēlēthua	bēlēthuani	‘window’
	cērēmua	cērēmuaniy	‘clothes’
/-eet	ngareet	ngareetei	‘healer’
/-nya	dīlanya	dīlanyanei	‘spear’
/-iok	geeniok	geeniowei	‘food, life’
	tuwayiok	tuwayiowiy	‘shepherd’
/-i	mīrkīci	mīrkīcinei	‘male sheep’
/-ēēn	bulēēn	bulēēnei	‘porridge’
	bīyēēn	bīyēēniy	‘stone’
/-een	tūūreen	tūūreenei	‘gun’
/-t	lobelet	lobeletei	‘bed’
/-īt	nyarrangīt	nyarrangītei	‘arrow’
/-e	kurrece	kurrecenei	‘monkey’
/-ti	ibaati	ibaatinei	‘upper arm’
/-og-	gōtōðnōga	gōtōðnōga	‘our brother’

Take notice that **y** follows **i** and the ends of words, but **i** does not follow **e**, **a** or any other vowel at the end of words. For example, **y** follows **i** in **maamiy** 'with water'. But **i** follows **e** in **laabinei** 'with grains' and **i** follows **a** in **kaunyai** 'mothers-in-law'.

	Correct	Wrong	
iy	maamiy	maamie	‘water’
ei	laabinei	laabiney	‘grain’
ai	kaunyai	kaunyay	‘mother-in-law’

Exercise 9

In the following sentences, underline all verbs, draw a circle around words with a location marker, and draw a box around all objects.

ũk ngaa coo ciitha	‘The woman went to the house’
Ongi nē kēēta vurtia	‘He (hare) slept under the tree’
ēcēbēk et coo kartenta ĩcītō	‘She (woman) tied the man onto the grass bundle ‘
Ũk nyaapō kodolan kōrōōk.	‘The hare reached the compound.’
Avu ngaa ĩmma ĩthōng ũk kartēnei baatha.	‘A certain woman went for grass in the bush.’
Ũk ĩthōng ma thī ngī arawothi nē baath oo, . .	‘She went, and then when she reached the bush, . . .’
Ovo kabbīrrēna da tammutiddina	‘The wasps were going to the sky’

Possessive Markers (Genitive Case)

In this lesson, we learn that the suffix **-o** shows a singular noun is the owner or possessor of a singular noun. The suffix **-ak** shows that a singular noun is the possessor of a plural noun. The suffixes **-u**, **-nu** show that a plural noun is the possessor. These suffixes mark words as possessors and are called possessive markers.

Singular possessive suffix **-o** of a singular noun

In sentence (1), **bōwōl** ‘tortoise’ is the object—receiver of the action, and the form **bōwōl** is used.

- (1) ĩcīn ngaa coo bōwōl. ‘The woman saw a tortoise.’
 (2) ĩcīn ngaa coo ahat cī bōwōlo. ‘The woman saw the food of the tortoise.’

When a singular noun is the owner or possessor of something, a marker is added. Usually these words come after **cī** ‘of’. In (2), **bōwōlo** is a singular possessor of the *singular* noun **ahat** ‘food’. So, the singular possessive marker **-o** is added.

The following nouns can take the place of **bōwōlo** in sentence (2) and have the singular possessive marker **-o** or **-wo**.

Singular suffix	Object singular (Accusative)	Possessor singular (Genitive)	
	bōwōl	bōwōlo	‘tortoise’
	cīth	cītho	‘dikdik’
	kodob	kodobo	‘vulture’
	tdulum	tdulumo	‘hornbill’
	tūwūlūc	tūwūlūco	‘chicken’
	kēēlang	kēēlango	‘leopard’
	molok	molowo	‘voice’
	kūlūmī	kūlūmo	‘ostrich’
	ōlē	ōlēwo	‘bull’
	kurre	kurrewo	‘dove’
	keewu	keewuwo	‘bird’
	ballo	ballowo	‘dove’
	nyaapō	nyaapōwo	‘hare’
	nyepira	nyepirwo	‘hippopotamus’
	kau	kawwo	‘father-in-law’
	kītō	kītōwo	‘scorpion’
	ngumngumu	ngumngumuwo	‘owl’
	maa	maawo	‘lion’
	ngaa	ngaawo	‘woman, wife’
-it/	miroit	mirokto	‘enemy’
-c/	madooc	madooco	‘poisin’
-oc/	girococ	girococo	‘cockroach’
-nit/	tiyoonit	tiyoonto	‘tree type’
-eec/	loteec	loteeco	‘honey’
-tōt/	laabitot	laabitoto	‘grain’
-īt/	caavīt	caavīto	‘shoe’
-nanīt/	buurnanīt	buurnanto	‘egg’
-n/	athan	athano	‘thigh’

Singular possessive suffix –ak of a plural noun

In sentence (3), **bōwōl** ‘tortoise’ is the object.

- (3) Īcīn ngaa coo bōwōl. ‘The woman saw a tortoise.’
 (4) Īcīn ngaa coo aheenin cīk bōwōlak. ‘The woman saw the foods of the tortoise.’

In (4), **bōwōlak** is a singular possessor of the *plural* noun **aheenin** ‘foods’. So, the singular possessive marker –ak is added. Usually these words come after **cīk** ‘of’.

The following nouns can take the place of **bōwōlak** in sentence (4) and have the singular possessive marker **–ak** or **–wak**. The suffix **–ak** follows consonants and the suffix **–wak** follows vowels.

Singular suffix	Object singular (Accusative)	Possessor singular (Genitive)	
	bōwōl	bōwōlak	‘tortoise’
	cīth	cīthak	‘dikdik’
	kodob	kodobak	‘vulture’
	tdulum	tdulumak	‘hornbill’
	tūwūlūc	tūwūlūcak	‘chicken’
	kēēlang	kēēlangak	‘leopard’
	molok	molowak	‘voice’
	ōlē	ōlēak	‘bull’
	kurre	kurreak	‘dove’
	keewu	keewuak	‘bird’
	ballo	balloak	‘dove’
	nyaapō	nyaapōak	‘hare’
	nyepira	nyepiraak	‘hippopotamus’
	kau	kawak	‘father-in-law’
	kītō	kītōwak ¹⁵	‘scorpion’
	ngumngumu	ngumngumuwak ¹⁶	‘owl’
	maa	maawak	‘lion’
	ngaa	ngaawak	‘woman, wife’
-it/	miroit	miroktak	‘enemy’
-c/	madooc	madoocak	‘poisin’
-oc/	girococ	girococak	‘cockroach’
-nit/	tiyoonit	tiyoontak	‘tree type’
-eec/	loteec	loteecak	‘honey’
-tōt/	laabitot	laabitotak	‘grain’
-īt/	caavīt	caavītak	‘shoe’
-nanīt/	buurnanīt	buurnantak	‘egg’
-n/	athan	athanak	‘thigh’

Plural possessived suffixes –u, -nu

In sentence (5), **bōwōl** ‘tortoise’ is the object.

- (5) Īcīn ngaa coo bōwōl. ‘The woman saw a tortoise.’
 (6) Īcīn ngaa coo aheenin cīk bōwōluanu. ‘The woman saw foods of the tortoises.’

In (6), **bōwōluanu** is a plural possessor of the noun **aheenin** ‘foods’. So, the plural possessive marker –nu is added. Usually these words come after **cī** or **cīk** ‘of’.

¹⁵ Check for **kītōak**, similar to **nyaapōak**

¹⁶ Check for **ngumngumuak**, similar to **keewuak**

The following nouns can take the place of **bōwōluanu** in sentence (6) and have the plural possessive markers **-u** or **-nu**. The suffix **-u** follows consonants and the suffix **-nu** follows vowels.

Plural suffix	Object plural (Accusative)	Possessor plural (Genitive)	
	munyuny	munyuny u	‘star’
	ruguang	ruguang u	‘coconut meat’
	varany	varany u	‘palm branch’
	nyeterak	nyetera u	‘bride, groom’
	yayan	yaya nu	‘porcupine’
	laabi	laabi nu	‘grain’
	teeva	teeva nu	‘tree type’
	buuwo	buuwon u	‘tree type’
	kūūrū	kūūrū nu	‘tendon’
	ciili	ciili nu	‘star type’
/-ua	bēlēthua	bēlēthua nu	‘window’
/-eet	ngareet	ngareet u	‘healer’
/-nya	dīlanya	dīlanya nu	‘spear’
/-iok	geeniok	geeniow u	‘food, life’
/-i	mīrkīci	mīrkīci nu	‘male sheep’
/-ēēn	bulēēn	bulēēn u	‘porridge’
/-een	tūūreen	tūūreen u	‘gun’
/-t	lobelet	lobelet u	‘bed’
/-īt	nyarrangīt	nyarrangīt u	‘arrow’
/-e	kurrece	kurrece nu	‘monkey’
/-ti	ibaati	ibaati nu	‘upper arm’
/-og-	gōtōōnōga	gōtōōnōga	‘our brother’

Exercise 10

In the following sentences, underline all verbs, draw a circle around words with a possessive marker, and draw a box around all objects.

“Ee aribana ir cīk doolecak.”	“You are testing milks of the child.”
kawudii na baatī tiento noko	‘I am continually praising the father of the wedding’
athii nēēgē cī ovoyyi kōrōōkjowei īcīk Didingawu	‘they do not go to the homes of Didinga’
Ma thī balna ivitia nē kī nyakamuranya cīk kabbīrrēnu.	‘Then she came with in-laws of the wasps.’
Īī baatī dooleco ne,	‘The father of the child says,
īthōng ma nabō thōōtha cī Nyekuco a ne,	‘and also the Word of God says’

ngatarka niia athii cĩ owobi ngĩran cĩ eetu

‘because you do not follow the tradition of the people’

Pronouns

A pronoun takes the place of a noun. It is a substitute or replacement for a noun previously mentioned. For example in the sentence below, the pronoun **nē** ‘he’ takes the place of **eeti ĩmma** ‘a certain person’.

Avĩ balna eeti ĩmma ĩthõng otod kēēta, ‘Was certain person who climbed tree,’
ĩthõng mĩ avĩ **nē** kēēta tĩddĩna wo, . . . ‘and when **he** was up in the tree, . . .’

There are four different kinds of pronouns called subject pronouns, object pronouns, location pronouns and possessive pronouns.

Subject Pronouns

The sentences below show six different pronouns. Often the letters in parentheses () are not spoken. Each of the pronouns takes the place of the person *doing* the action. They are called subject pronouns. For example, **nē** or **nēnē** ‘he’ represents a person who did the action **ongi** ‘slept’.

Subject Pronouns

Kongi	na(na)	kēēta vũrtĩa.	‘ <u>I</u> slept under a tree.’
Ongi	ni(n)a	kēēta vũrtĩa.	‘ <u>You(sg)</u> slept under a tree.’
Ongi	nē(nē)	kēēta vũrtĩa.	‘ <u>He/she</u> slept under a tree.’
Kogin	naaga	kēēta vũrtĩa.	‘ <u>We (& you)</u> slept under a tree.’
Kogina	naaga	kēēta vũrtĩa.	‘ <u>We (not you)</u> slept under a tree.’
Oginu	niigja	kēēta vũrtĩa.	‘ <u>You(pl)</u> slept under a tree.’
Ogin	nēēgē	kēēta vũrtĩa.	‘ <u>They</u> slept under a tree.’

The verb form changes with the pronoun. For example, the verb form **ongi** is used with the pronoun **nē(nē)** ‘he’, but the verb form **kogina** is used with the pronoun **naaga** ‘we’.

Object Pronouns

The sentences below show six more pronouns. Each of them takes the place of the person or persons *receiving* the action. They are called object pronouns. For example, **ĩnõõnõ** ‘him’ represents a person that received the action **ennei** ‘said to’.

Object Pronouns

Enneca	ngaai	aneeta	ne,	‘The women said to <u>me</u> , . . .’
Enneci	ngaai	aniita	ne,	‘The women said to <u>you(sg)</u> , . . .’
Ennei	ngaai	ĩnõõnõ	ne,	‘The women said to <u>him/her</u> , . . .’

Ennecet	ngaa	agēēta	ne,	‘The women said to <u>us</u> , . . .’
Ennecung	ngaa	agiita	ne,	‘The women said to <u>you(pl)</u> , . . .’
Ennei	ngaa	īgōōgō	ne,	‘The women said to <u>them</u> , . . .’

Again, the verb form changes with the pronoun. For example, the verb form **enneca** is used with the pronoun **aneeta** ‘me’, but the verb form **enneci** is used with the pronoun **aniita** ‘you(sg)’.

Location Pronouns

The sentences below show six more pronouns. Each of them takes the place of the person where the action is located. They are called location pronouns. For example, **īcīnnī** ‘him’ represents a person near where **avu ngaa** ‘the woman stays’.

Location Pronouns

Avu	ngaa	ōjōōn	īcannī.	‘The woman stays near <u>me</u> .’
Avu	ngaa	ōjōōn	īcunnī.	‘The woman stays near <u>you(sg)</u> ’
Avu	ngaa	ōjōōn	īcīnnī.	‘The woman stays near <u>him/her</u> .’
Avu	ngaa	ōjōōn	īcīnang.	‘The woman stays near <u>us</u> , . . .’
Avu	ngaa	ōjōōn	īcunung.	‘The woman stays near <u>you(pl)</u> .’
Avu	ngaa	ōjōōn	īcīnīng.	‘The woman stays near <u>them</u> .’

Possessive Pronouns

A fourth type of pronoun takes the place of someone that something belongs to or is possessed by. These are called possessive pronouns. For example, **cīnnī** ‘him’ represents a person who owns or possesses **kēlēgīt** ‘animal’.

Uruk	eeti	kēlēgīt	cannī.	‘The man killed the animal of <u>me</u> .’
Uruk	eeti	kēlēgīt	cunnī.	‘The man killed the animal of <u>you(sg)</u> ’
Uruk	eeti	kēlēgīt	cīnnī.	‘The man killed the animal of <u>him/her</u> .’
Uruk	eeti	kēlēgīt	cīnang.	‘The man killed the animal of <u>us</u> , . . .’
Uruk	eeti	kēlēgīt	cunung.	‘The man killed the animal of <u>you(pl)</u> .’
Uruk	eeti	kēlēgīt	cīnīng.	‘The man killed the animal of <u>them</u> .’

Exercise 11

In the following sentences, underline all pronouns. Do not underline any words that are not pronouns. Underline a word once if it is a subject pronoun. Underline a word twice if it is an object pronoun. Underline and circle a word if it is a possessive pronoun.

Ūūk thī nē kī kūthūūth, ma thī mī anyi nē oo,	‘So she went to the black ant, and then when she gave herself, . . .’
Atdūkai eeti īnōōnō mūnnī cīk abiri.	‘A man threw to her fruit that was ripe.’
Itik ngaa et coo uwi ciitha cīnnī īcītō.	‘A woman carried this man and took

“Narērūngi cannī nga?”	him inside her house.’ “Where is my broom?”
“Yei niigia nyī nga ūkonu.”	“Please, do not fight.”

Possessive Pronouns

In the previous lesson, we learned about object pronouns, subject pronouns, location pronouns, and possessive pronouns. In this lesson, we learn how possessive pronouns can be singular or plural, and can be used as objects, subjects, locations, and stative verbs. All these pronouns take the place of owners of nouns and are called possessive pronouns.

With or without *cī*, *cīk*

Possessive pronouns take the place of owners. In (1) and (2), the possessive pronoun **cannī** ‘me, my’ takes the place of the person owning **kēlēgīt**. In (1), **cannī** occurs after **cī**. However, as in (2), **cannī** can also occur directly after the possessed noun **kēlēgīt**.

(1) Uruk eeti kēlēgīt cannī .	‘The man killed the animal of me .’
(2) Uruk eeti kēlēgīt cannī .	‘The man killed my animal.’

Singular and Plural possessive pronouns

Possessive pronouns are either singular or plural. In (3), the singular pronoun **cīnnī** ‘his’ is the owner of the *singular* noun **kēlēgīt** ‘animal’. In (4), the plural pronoun **cīgīnīk** ‘his’ is the owner of the *plural* noun **kēlēgīt** ‘animals’.

(3) Uruk eeti kēlēgīt cīnnī .	‘The man killed his animal.’
(4) Uruk eeti kēlēgē cīgīnīk .	‘The man killed his animals.’

Object possessive pronouns

Possessive pronouns can be the owners of object nouns, subject nouns, or location nouns. They change in spelling or tone to match the noun.

In (5), the singular pronoun **cannī** ‘my’ is the owner of the object **kēlēgīt** ‘animal’. In (6), the plural pronoun **cīganīk** ‘my’ is the owner of the plural object **kēlēgē**.

(5) Īcīn ngaa kēlēgīt cannī .	‘The woman saw my animal.’
(6) Īcīn ngaa kēlēgē cīganīk .	‘The woman saw my animals.’

The following possessive pronouns and nouns can take the place of **kēlēgīt cannī** in sentence (5) or **kēlēgē cīganīk** in sentence (6). The tone of the pronouns is given in brackets [].

Object possessive pronouns

Singular			Plural				
kĕlēgĭt	cannĭ ¹⁷	[H,L]	‘my’	kĕlēgĕ	cĭganĭk	[H,L,L]	‘my’
kĕlēgĭt	cunnĭ	[H,L]	‘your (sg)’	kĕlēgĕ	cugunĭk	[H,L,L]	‘your (sg)’
kĕlēgĭt	cĭnnĭ	[H,L]	‘his/her’	kĕlēgĕ	cĭgĭnĭk	[H,L,L]	‘his/her’
kĕlēgĭt	cĭnnĭyang	[H,H,L]	‘our’	kĕlēgĕ	cĭgaacak	[H,H,L]	‘our’
kĕlēgĭt	cĭnang	[H,HL]	‘our’	kĕlēgĕ	cĭgĭncak	[H,H,L]	‘our’
kĕlēgĭt	cunung	[H,HL]	‘your(pl)’	kĕlēgĕ	cuguuk	[H,HL]	‘your(pl)’
kĕlēgĭt	cĭnĭng	[H,HL]	‘their’	kĕlēgĕ	cuguucak	[H,H,L]	‘their’

Subject possessive pronouns

In (7), the singular pronoun **cannie** is the owner of the singular subject **kĕlēgĭti**. In (8), the plural pronoun **cĭganĭek** is the owner of the plural subject **kĕlēgĕ**.

- (7) Avĭ kĕlēgĭti **cannie**. ‘There is my animal.’
 (8) Aati kĕlēgĕ **cĭganĭek**. ‘There are my animals.’

The following possessive pronouns and nouns can take the place of **kĕlēgĭti **cannie**** in sentence (7) or **kĕlēgĕ **cĭganĭek**** in sentence (8).

Subject possessive pronouns

Singular			Plural				
kĕlēgĭti	cannie ¹⁸	[HL,L]	‘my’	kĕlēgĕ	cĭganĭek	[H,L,L]	‘my’
kĕlēgĭti	cunnĭe	[HL,L]	‘your(sg)’	kĕlēgĕ	cugunĭek	[H,L,L]	‘your(sg)’
kĕlēgĭti	cĭnne	[HL,L]	‘his/her’	kĕlēgĕ	cĭgĭnek	[H,L,L]	‘his/her’
kĕlēgĭti	cĭnnĭyang	[H,L,H]	‘our’	kĕlēgĕ	cĭgaacak	[H,L,H]	‘our’
kĕlēgĭti	cĭnang	[H,LH]	‘our’	kĕlēgĕ	cĭgĭncak	[H,L,H]	‘our’
kĕlēgĭti	cunung	[H,LH]	‘your(pl)’	kĕlēgĕ	cuguuk	[H,LH]	‘your(pl)’
kĕlēgĭti	cĭnĭng	[H,LH]	‘their’	kĕlēgĕ	cuguucak	[H,L,H]	‘their’

Location possessive pronouns

In (9), the singular pronoun (**ĭ**)**cannĭ** is the owner of the singular location **kĕlēgĭta**. In (10), the plural pronoun (**ĭ**)**cĭganĭk** is the owner of the plural location **kĕlēgĕnei**. The (**ĭ**) is optional; it is not said by all speakers.

- (9) Avu ngaa joonui kĕlēgĭta (**ĭ**)cannĭ. ‘The woman was near my animal.’
 (10) Avu ngaa joonui kĕlēgĕnei (**ĭ**)cĭganĭk. ‘The woman was near my animals.’

The following possessive pronouns and nouns can take the place of **kĕlēgĭta (**ĭ**)cannĭ** in sentence (9) or **kĕlēgĕnei (**ĭ**)cĭganĭk** in sentence (10).

Location possessive pronouns

Singular	Plural
----------	--------

¹⁷ Also **cĭnanĭ**

¹⁸ Also **cĭnanĭe**

kêlêgĩta	(i)canni ¹⁹	[(H),L,H]	‘my’	kêlêgẽnei	(i)cĩganĩk	[(H),L,L,H]	‘my’
kêlêgĩta	(i)cunni	[(H),L,H]	‘your’	kêlêgẽnei	(i)cugunĩk	[(H),L,L,H]	‘your’
kêlêgĩta	(i)cĩnnĩ	[(H),L,H]	‘his/her’	kêlêgẽnei	(i)cĩgĩnĩk	[(H),L,L,H]	‘his/her’
kêlêgĩta	(i)cĩnnĩyang	[(H),L,H,L]	‘our’	kêlêgẽnei	(i)cĩgaacak	[(H),L,H,L]	‘our’
kêlêgĩta	(i)cĩnang	[(H),L,HL]	‘our’	kêlêgẽnei	(i)cĩgĩcack	[(H),L,H,L]	‘our’
kêlêgĩta	(i)cunung	[(H),L,HL]	‘your’	kêlêgẽnei	(i)cuguuk	[(H),L,HL]	‘your’
kêlêgĩta	(i)cĩnĩng	[(H),L,HL]	‘their’	kêlêgẽnei	(i)cuguucak	[(H),L,H,L]	‘their’

Possessive pronouns used as stative verbs

Sometimes possessive pronouns are used as stative verbs. Stative verbs describe the way things are. In (11), the verb **canni** describes the state of ownership of the singular subject **kêlêgĩti**. In (12), the verb **cĩganĩk** describes the ownership of the plural subject **kêlêgẽ**.

- (11) **Canni** kêlêgĩti. ‘The animal is mine.’
(12) **Cĩganĩk** kêlêgẽ. ‘The animals are mine.’

The following verb forms describe the ownership in other ways.

Possessive pronouns used as stative verbs

Singular			Plural		
[H,H]	Canni ²⁰	kêlêgĩti. ‘mine’	[H,H,H]	Cĩganĩk	kêlêgẽ. ‘mine’
[H,H]	Cunni	kêlêgĩti. ‘yours(sg)’	[H,H,H]	Cugunĩk	kêlêgẽ. ‘yours(sg)’
[H,H]	Cĩnnĩ	kêlêgĩti. ‘his/hers’	[H,H,H]	Cĩgĩnĩk	kêlêgẽ. ‘his/hers’
[H,H,L]	Cĩnnĩyang	kêlêgĩti. ‘ours’	[L,H,L]	Cĩgaacak ²¹	kêlêgẽ. ‘ours’
[H,HL]	Cĩnang ²²	kêlêgĩti. ‘ours’	[L,H,L]	Cĩgĩcack	kêlêgẽ. ‘ours’
[H,HL]	Cunung	kêlêgĩti. ‘yours(pl)’	[L,HL]	Cuguuk	kêlêgẽ. ‘yours(pl)’
[H,HL]	Cĩnĩng	kêlêgĩti. ‘theirs’	[L,H,L]	Cuguucak	kêlêgẽ. ‘theirs’

Exercise 12

In the following sentences, underline all verbs, draw a circle around singular possessive pronouns, and draw a box around plural possessive pronouns.

“Adim ngẽnẽ narẽrũngi canni ngato?”

“Who took my broom?”

“Yõkõ niigia avuut niigia vëlêk ito ngaai cĩganĩk.”

“Now, both you, stay and be my wives.”

Ĩthõng alangan kõr otoo cĩgĩnĩk.

‘And the sun melted his horns.’

Adiman balna kêlêgẽ tienit cĩnĩng.

‘The animals were having their wedding feast.’

¹⁹ Also **(i)cĩnani** [(H),L,L,H]

²⁰ Also **Cĩnani** [H,L,L]

²¹ Also **Cĩgĩcack** [L,H,L]

²² Also **Cĩnnĩyang** [H,H,L]

Atŭrran thĭ gōḍ nedo ēlē cĭnnĭ.	‘He was sometimes trying to wake himself up.’
“Avĭ kōrōḍgi cannie icidiinu.”	“My home is on the other side.”
Ma ba natē ovoccit eeta tōmōnya cĭgĭk.	‘And the people were singing for their bulls.’

Time of Ownership of Possessive Pronouns

Possessive pronouns show the time of ownership. In the clauses below, the pronoun **cannĭ** ‘my’ shows that **kēlēgĭt** ‘animal’ is owned now by me. The pronoun **wannĭ** ‘my’ shows that **kēlēgĭt** was recently owned by me. And, the pronoun **wu banannĭ** ‘my’ shows that **kēlēgĭt** was owned sometime in the past by me.

Singular time possessive pronouns

Uruk eeti kēlēgĭt cannĭ .	‘The man killed my animal.’
Uruk eeti kēlēgĭt wannĭ .	‘The man killed my recent animal.’
Uruk eeti kēlēgĭt wu banannĭ .	‘The man killed my past animal.’

There are also three sets of pronouns for owning plural nouns.

Plural time possessive pronouns

Uruk eeti kēlēgē cĭganĭk .	‘The man killed my animals.’
Uruk eeti kēlēgē wuganĭk .	‘The man killed my recent animals.’
Uruk eeti kēlēgē wuk baganĭk .	‘The man killed my past animals.’

These pronouns are similar to relative connectors that we will learn about in a later lesson. In the examples below, the three singular relative connectors **cĭ**, **wu**, **wu ba** are compared. Then, the three plural relative connectors **cĭk**, **wuk**, **wuk balna** are compared.

Singular relative connectors

Īcĭn ngaa <u>ahat</u> [cĭ bōwōlo].	Woman saw food of tortoise.
Īcĭn ngaa <u>ahat</u> [wu bōwōlo].	Woman saw recent food of tortoise.
Īcĭn ngaa <u>ahat</u> [wu ba bōwōlo].	Woman saw past food of tortoise.

Plural relative connectors

Īcĭn ngaa <u>aheenin</u> [cĭk bōwōluanu].	Woman saw foods of tortoises.
Īcĭn ngaa <u>aheenin</u> [wuk bōwōluanu].	Woman saw recent foods of tortoises.
Īcĭn ngaa <u>aheenin</u> [wuk balna bōwōluanu].	Woman saw past foods of tortoises.

The pronouns and connectors are compared in the chart below:

connector	pronoun	connector	pronoun	connector	pronoun	
cĭ	cannĭ	wu	wannĭ	wu ba	wu banannĭ	Singular
cĭk	cĭganĭk	wuk	wuganĭk	wuk balna	wuk baganĭk	Plural
‘owned now’		‘recently owned’		‘owned in the past’		

Object possessive pronouns with three times

Possessives pronouns with each of the three times of ownership can be used to describe objects such as in the clauses below:

- (1) Īcīn ngaa kēlēgīt **cannī**. ‘The woman saw **my** animal.’
 (2) Īcīn ngaa kēlēgē **cīganīk**. ‘The woman saw **my** animals.’

The following singular possessive pronouns and nouns can take the place of **kēlēgīt cannī** in sentence (1) and the plural possessive pronouns can take the place of **kēlēgē cīganīk** in sentence (2). The tone of the pronouns is given in brackets []. Below, the ‘owned now’ pronouns are repeated from the previous section and compared with possessive pronouns with other times of ownership.

Object possessive pronouns ‘Owned now’

Singular			Plural				
kēlēgīt	cannī ²³	[H,L]	‘my’	kēlēgē	cīganīk	[H,L,L]	‘my’
kēlēgīt	cunnī	[H,L]	‘your (sg)’	kēlēgē	cugunīk	[H,L,L]	‘your (sg)’
kēlēgīt	cīnnī	[H,L]	‘his/her’	kēlēgē	cīgīnīk	[H,L,L]	‘his/her’
kēlēgīt	cīnnīyang	[H,H,L]	‘our’	kēlēgē	cīgaacak	[H,H,L]	‘our’
kēlēgīt	cīnang	[H,HL]	‘our’	kēlēgē	cīgīncak	[H,H,L]	‘our’
kēlēgīt	cunung	[H,HL]	‘your(pl)’	kēlēgē	cuguuk	[H,HL]	‘your(pl)’
kēlēgīt	cīnīng	[H,HL]	‘their’	kēlēgē	cuguucak	[H,H,L]	‘their’

Object possessive pronouns ‘Owned recently’

Singular			Plural				
kēlēgīt	wannī	[HL,L]	‘my’	kēlēgē	wuganīk	[H,L,L]	‘my’
kēlēgīt	wunnī	[HL,L]	‘your (sg)’	kēlēgē	wugunīk	[H,L,L]	‘your (sg)’
kēlēgīt	wīnnī	[HL,L]	‘his/her’	kēlēgē	wugīnīk	[H,L,L]	‘his/her’
kēlēgīt	wīnnīyang	[H,H,L]	‘our’	kēlēgē	wugaacak	[H,H,L]	‘our’
kēlēgīt	wunang	[H,HL]	‘our’	kēlēgē	wugīncak	[H,H,L]	‘our’
kēlēgīt	wunung	[H,HL]	‘your(pl)’	kēlēgē	wuguuk	[H,HL]	‘your(pl)’
kēlēgīt	wīnīng	[H,HL]	‘their’	kēlēgē	wuguucak	[H,H,L]	‘their’

Object possessive pronouns ‘Owned in the past’

Singular			Plural				
kēlēgīt	wu banannī	[H,L,L,L]	‘my’	kēlēgē	wuk baganīk	[H,L,L,L]	‘my’
kēlēgīt	wu banunnī	[H,L,L,L]	‘your’	kēlēgē	wuk bagunīk	[H,L,L,L]	‘your’
kēlēgīt	wu banīnī	[H,L,H,L]	‘his/her’	kēlēgē	wuk bagīnīk	[H,L,L,L]	‘his/her’
kēlēgīt	wu banīyang	[H,L,H,L]	‘our’	kēlēgē	wuk bagacak	[H,L,H,L]	‘our’
kēlēgīt	wu banayang	[H,L,H,L]	‘our’	kēlēgē	wuk bagīcak	[H,L,H,L]	‘our’
	wu banang	[H,L,HL]			wuk bargaak	[H,L,HL]	
kēlēgīt	wu banuyang	[H,L,H,L]	‘your(pl)’	kēlēgē	wuk bagucak	[H,L,H,L]	‘your(pl)’
	wu banung	[H,L,HL]			wuk baguuk	[H,L,HL]	
kēlēgīt	wu banīng	[H,L,HL]	‘their’	kēlēgē	wuk bagiik	[H,L,HL]	‘their’

²³ Also **cīnanī**

Subject possessive pronouns with three times

Possessive pronouns with three times of ownership can also be used to describe subjects, such as in the clauses below:

- (3) Avī kēlēgīti cannie. ‘There is my animal.’
 (4) Aati kēlēgē cīganiek. ‘There are my animals.’

The following singular possessive pronouns and nouns can take the place of **kēlēgīti cannie** in sentence (3) and the plural possessive pronouns can take the place of **kēlēgē cīganiek** in sentence (4).

Subject possessive pronouns ‘Owned now’

Singular			Plural				
kēlēgīti	cannie ²⁴	[HL,L]	‘my’	kēlēgē	cīganiek	[H,L,L]	‘my’
kēlēgīti	cunnie	[HL,L]	‘your(sg)’	kēlēgē	cuguniek	[H,L,L]	‘your(sg)’
kēlēgīti	cīnne	[HL,L]	‘his/her’	kēlēgē	cīgīnek	[H,L,L]	‘his/her’
kēlēgīti	cīnnīyang	[H,L,H]	‘our’	kēlēgē	cīgaacak	[H,L,H]	‘our’
kēlēgīti	cīnang	[H,LH]	‘our’	kēlēgē	cīgīncak	[H,L,H]	‘our’
kēlēgīti	cunung	[H,LH]	‘your(pl)’	kēlēgē	cuguuk	[H,LH]	‘your(pl)’
kēlēgīti	cīnīng	[H,LH]	‘their’	kēlēgē	cuguucak	[H,L,H]	‘their’

Subject possessive pronouns ‘Owned recently’

Singular			Plural				
kēlēgīt	wannie	[H,L]	‘my’	kēlēgē	wuganiek	[H,L,L]	‘my’
kēlēgīt	wunnie	[H,L]	‘your (sg)’	kēlēgē	wuguniek	[H,L,L]	‘your (sg)’
kēlēgīt	wunne	[H,L]	‘his/her’	kēlēgē	wugīnek	[H,L,L]	‘his/her’
kēlēgīt	wunnīyang	[H,L,H]	‘our’	kēlēgē	wugaacak	[H,L,H]	‘our’
kēlēgīt	wunang	[H,L]	‘our’	kēlēgē	wugīncak	[H,L,H]	‘our’
kēlēgīt	wunung	[H,L]	‘your(pl)’	kēlēgē	wuguuk	[H,L]	‘your(pl)’
kēlēgīt	wīnīng	[H,L]	‘their’	kēlēgē	wuguucak	[H,L,H]	‘their’

Subject possessive pronouns ‘Owned in the past’

Singular			Plural				
kēlēgīt	wu bananie	[H,L,L,L]	‘my’	kēlēgē	wuk baganiek	[H,L,L,L]	‘my’
kēlēgīt	wu banunie	[H,L,L,L]	‘your’	kēlēgē	wuk baguniek	[H,L,L,L]	‘your’
kēlēgīt	wu banine	[H,L,L,L]	‘his/her’	kēlēgē	wuk bagīnek	[H,L,L,L]	‘his/her’
kēlēgīt	wu banīyang	[H,L,H,L]	‘our’	kēlēgē	wuk bagacak	[H,L,H,L]	‘our’
kēlēgīt	wu banang	[H,L,HL]	‘our’	kēlēgē	wuk bargaak	[H,L,L]	‘our’
kēlēgīt	wu banung	[H,L,HL]	‘your(pl)’	kēlēgē	wuk baguuk	[H,L,L]	‘your(pl)’
kēlēgīt	wu banīng	[H,L,HL]	‘their’	kēlēgē	wuk bagiik	[H,L,L]	‘their’

Location possessive pronouns with three times

Possessive pronouns with three times of ownership can also be used to describe locations,

²⁴ Also **cīnanie**

such as in the clauses below:

- (5) Avu ngaa joonui kĕlēgĭta (ĭ)cannĭ. ‘The woman was near my animal.’
 (6) Avu ngaa joonui kĕlēgĕnei (ĭ)cĭganĭk. ‘The woman was near my animals.’

The following singular possessive pronouns and nouns can take the place of **kĕlēgĭta (ĭ)cannĭ** in sentence (5) and the plural possessive pronouns can take the place of **kĕlēgĕnei (ĭ)cĭganĭk** in sentence (6). These location possessive pronouns can be the same as for object possessive pronouns except that some differ in tone.

Location possessive pronouns ‘Owned now’

Singular			Plural				
kĕlēgĭta	(ĭ)cannĭ	[(H),L,H]	‘my’	kĕlēgĕnei	(ĭ)cĭganĭk	[(H),L,L,H]	‘my’
kĕlēgĭta	(ĭ)cunni	[(H),L,H]	‘your’	kĕlēgĕnei	(ĭ)cugunĭk	[(H),L,L,H]	‘your’
kĕlēgĭta	(ĭ)cĭnnĭ	[(H),L,H]	‘his/her’	kĕlēgĕnei	(ĭ)cĭgĭnĭk	[(H),L,L,H]	‘his/her’
kĕlēgĭta	(ĭ)cĭnnĭyang	[(H),L,H,L]	‘our’	kĕlēgĕnei	(ĭ)cĭgaacak	[(H),L,H,L]	‘our’
kĕlēgĭta	(ĭ)cĭnang	[(H),L,HL]	‘our’	kĕlēgĕnei	(ĭ)cĭgĭcak	[(H),L,H,L]	‘our’
kĕlēgĭta	(ĭ)cunung	[(H),L,HL]	‘your(pl)’	kĕlēgĕnei	(ĭ)cuguuk	[(H),L,HL]	‘your(pl)’
kĕlēgĭta	(ĭ)cannĭ	[(H),L,H]	‘my’	kĕlēgĕnei	(ĭ)cĭganĭk	[(H),L,L,H]	‘my’

Location possessive pronouns ‘Owned recently’

Singular			Plural				
kĕlēgĭt	wannĭ	[H,H]	‘my’	kĕlēgĕ	wuganĭk	[H,H,H]	‘my’
kĕlēgĭt	wunnĭ	[H,H]	‘your (sg)’	kĕlēgĕ	wugunĭk	[H,H,H]	‘your (sg)’
kĕlēgĭt	wĭnnĭ	[H,H]	‘his/her’	kĕlēgĕ	wugĭnĭk	[H,H,H]	‘his/her’
kĕlēgĭt	wĭnnĭyang	[H,H,L]	‘our’	kĕlēgĕ	wugaacak	[H,H,L]	‘our’
kĕlēgĭt	wunang	[H,HL]	‘our’	kĕlēgĕ	wugĭcak	[H,H,L]	‘our’
kĕlēgĭt	wunung	[H,HL]	‘your(pl)’	kĕlēgĕ	wuguuk	[H,HL]	‘your(pl)’
kĕlēgĭt	wĭnĭng	[H,HL]	‘their’	kĕlēgĕ	wuguucak	[H,H,L]	‘their’

Location possessive pronouns ‘Owned in the past’

Singular			Plural				
kĕlēgĭt	wu bananĭ	[H,L,L,L]	‘my’	kĕlēgĕ	wuk baganĭk	[H,L,H,H]	‘my’
kĕlēgĭt	wu banunĭ	[H,L,L,L]	‘your’	kĕlēgĕ	wuk bagunĭk	[H,L,H,H]	‘your’
kĕlēgĭt	wu banĭnĭ	[H,L,H,L]	‘his/her’	kĕlēgĕ	wuk bagĭnĭk	[H,L,H,H]	‘his/her’
kĕlēgĭt	wu banĭyang	[H,L,H,L]	‘our’	kĕlēgĕ	wuk bagacak	[H,L,H,L]	‘our’
kĕlēgĭt	wu banang	[H,L,HL]	‘our’	kĕlēgĕ	wuk bagaak	[H,L,HL]	‘our’
kĕlēgĭt	wu banung	[H,L,HL]	‘your(pl)’	kĕlēgĕ	wuk baguuk	[H,L,HL]	‘your(pl)’
kĕlēgĭt	wu banĭng	[H,L,HL]	‘their’	kĕlēgĕ	wuk bagiik	[H,L,HL]	‘their’

Exercise 13

In the following sentences, underline all verbs, draw a circle around singular possessive pronouns, and draw a box around plural possessive pronouns.

“Ivĭtia da ĭcĭnĭt nyaapĕ

“Come see hare

ithico otoo wugĩnek.”

whose horns disappeared.”

“Avĩ kōrōōgi wunnie icidiinu.”

“My recent home is on other side.”

Ma ba natē ovoccit eeta tōmōnya wukbagiik. ‘People sang for their past bulls.’

“Adim ngēnē narērūngi wu banannĩ ngato?” “Who took my past broom?”

Demonstrative and Indefinite Pronouns

A few other pronouns take the place of nouns. Demonstrative pronouns point to or show certain nouns. There are three distances of singular demonstrative pronouns. The demonstrative pronoun **coo** ‘this’ takes the place of a singular noun near the speaker. **Neccie** ‘that’ takes the place of a singular noun near the hearer. **Neccuo** ‘this’ takes the place of a singular noun near both speaker and hearer. **Nīcē** ‘that’ takes the place of a singular noun far from both speaker and hearer.

Singular demonstrative pronouns

Een **coo** kēlēgīt. ‘**This** is animal (near speaker).’

Een **neccie** kēlēgīt. ‘**That** is animal (near hearer).’

Een **neccuo** kēlēgīt. ‘**That** is animal (far from speaker and hearer).’

There are also three distances of plural demonstrative pronouns.

Plural demonstrative pronouns (check these)

Een **ciko** kēlēgē. ‘**These** are animals (near speaker).’

Een **neekie** kēlēgē. ‘**Those** are animals (near hearer).’

Een **nekuo** kēlēgē. ‘**Those** are animals (far from speaker and hearer).’

These eight demonstrative pronouns are listed below.

Demonstrative pronouns

Singular

		Plural		
coo	‘this’	ciko	‘these’	near speaker
neccie	‘that’	neekie	‘those’	near hearer
neccuo	‘that’	nekuo	‘those’	far from both

Indefinite pronouns take the place of nouns that have not yet been mentioned. The singular indefinite pronoun **ĩmma** ‘another’ takes the place of a singular noun. The plural indefinite pronoun **guak** ‘others’ takes the place of a plural noun.

Singular indefinite pronoun

Een **ĩmma** kēlēgīt. ‘**Another** is an animal.’

Plural indefinite pronoun

Een **guak** kēlēgē. ‘**Others** are animals.’

Singular and plural indefinite pronouns are listed below.

Indefinite pronouns

Singular		Plural
ĩmma	[L,H] ‘another’	guak [LH] ‘others’

Exercise 14

In the following sentences, underline demonstrative pronouns and draw a circle around indefinite pronouns.

Een guak kěěna.	‘Others are trees.’
Een ciko nyarrangĩt.	‘These are arrows.’
Een nĩcě ěěth.	‘That is a goat.’
Een ĩmma laan.	‘Another is an arrow.’

“Yei lōgōth oyokonta da nō nĩcě kurumtoi kōrōōk ĩcĩ gōōla. “You people, go from that other side and we will meet at my house.”

Types of Clauses

In this lesson, we learn that equative clauses are introduced with the verb **ěěn/ĩ** ‘be, is, are, was, were’, presentational clauses are introduced with the verb **avĩ/avu** or **aati**, **avuto** ‘there is, was, are, were’, and adjectival clauses are introduced with stative verbs.

Equative clauses

Equative clauses are like an equation in mathematics; they say one thing is the same as another. We say two added to three is the same as or equal to five ($2 + 3 = 5$). This is similar to the clauses below. In (1), **ěěn** ‘be, is, are’ is like an equal sign (=) in an equation that says **goryiaiti = volongnyiait**. In (2), **ěěn** is like an equal sign that says **volongnyiaiti = goryiait**.

- (1) **Ěěn** goryiaiti volongnyiait. ‘The thief is a spy.’
- (2) **Ěěn** volongnyiaiti goryiait. ‘The spy is a thief.’

Whichever noun comes first after the verb **ěěn** is the subject (nominative case). The second noun is the object (accusative case). In (1) the noun **goryiaiti** ‘thief’ has the singular subject suffix **-i**. In (2), the noun **volongnyiaiti** ‘spy’ also has the suffix **-i**. Neither of these nouns have a subject suffix when they are second in the clause (**volongnyiait**, **goryiait**).

The same verb **ěěn** is used if the nouns are plural, as in (3-4). Again the first noun after

the verb is the subject. In (3), the noun **goryiaha** has the plural subject suffix **-a**. In (4), the noun **volongnyiaha** also has the suffix **-a**.

- (3) Ēēn goryiaha volongnyiak. ‘The theives are spies.’
(4) Ēēn volongnyiaha goryiak. ‘The spies are theives.’

When the equation was true but may not be true any longer, the completive verb **ī** ‘was, were’ is used as the equal sign in the equative clause. The difference between completive and incompletive verbs is talked about in the lesson on verbs.

- (5) Ī goryiaiti volongnyiait. ‘The thief was a spy.’
(6) Ī volongnyiaiti goryiait. ‘The spy was a thief.’
(7) Ī goryiaha volongnyiak. ‘The theives were spies.’
(8) Ī volongnyiaha goryiak. ‘The spies were theives.’

Pronouns can be used instead of nouns in equative clauses. In (9), the subject pronoun **nē** ‘he’ is used first after the verb **ēēn**. In (10), the object pronoun **īnōōnō** ‘him’ is used second after the verb.

- (9) Ēēn nē volongnyiait. ‘He is a spy.’
(10) Ēēn volongnyiaiti īnōōnō. ‘The spy is him.’

Demonstrative pronouns can also be used instead of the first noun in equative clauses. In (11), the singular subject demonstrative **coo** ‘this’ is used with the singular noun **volongnyiait** ‘spy’. In (12), the plural subject demonstrative **ciko** ‘these’ is used with the plural noun **volongnyiak** ‘spies’. In the lesson on demonstratives pronouns, there are other demonstratives used as subjects of equative clauses.

- (11) Ēēn coo volongnyiait. ‘This is a spy.’
(12) Ēēn ciko volongnyiak. ‘These are spies.’

Adjectives can be used instead of the second noun in equative clauses. In (13), the singular adjective **tuuri** ‘short’ is used with the singular noun **goryiaiti** ‘thief’. In (14), the plural adjective **tuurik** ‘short’ is used with the plural noun **goryiaha** ‘thieves’. Adjectives are talked about more in a later lesson.

- (13) Ēēn goryiaiti tuura. ‘The thief is short.’
(14) Ēēn goryiaha tuure. ‘The thieves are short.’

Presentational clauses

Presentational clauses tell about or present a new person to those listening. Those listening may not know about the person presented or may need to be reminded about the person. The verb **avī** ‘there is’ presents a singular noun, as in (1). The verb **aati** ‘there are’ presents a plural noun, as in (2).

- (1) Avī goryiaiti. ‘There is a thief.’
 (2) Aati goryiaha. ‘There are thieves.’

The noun presented is a subject (nominative case). In (1), the noun **goryiaiti** has the singular subject suffix **-i**. In (2), the noun **goryiaha** has the plural subject suffix **-a**.

Sometimes the completive presentational verbs **avu**, **avuto** are used. The verb **avu** ‘there was’ is used for singular nouns as in (3). The verb **avuto** ‘there were’ is used for plural nouns as in (4).

- (3) Avu goryiaiti. ‘There was a thief.’
 (4) Avuto goryiaha. ‘There were thieves.’

Adjective clauses

Adjective clauses use stative verbs to describe a noun or pronoun. Stative verbs describe a state or the way things are. In (1), the singular stative verb **tuur** ‘is short’ describes the noun **goryiaiti** ‘thief’. In (2), the plural stative verb **tuure** ‘are short’ describes the noun **goryiaha** ‘thieves’.

- (1) Tuur goryiaiti. ‘The thief is short.’
 (2) Tuure goryiaha. ‘The thieves are short.’

The noun described by a stative verb is a subject (nominative case). In (1), the noun **goryiaiti** has the singular subject suffix **-i**. In (2), the noun **goryiaha** has the plural subject suffix **-a**. The most common suffix on plural stative verbs is **-e**. Stative verbs are talked about more in a later lesson.

The past verb **balna** ‘was’ is used with stative verbs to describe a noun that may no longer be as it used to be. In (4), the verb **balna** is used to say that **goryiaiti** may no longer **tuur** ‘be short’. The same stative form **tuur** is used for current states and past states.²⁵

- (3) Tuur goryiaiti. ‘The thief is short.’
 (4) Tuur balna goryiaiti. ‘The thief was short.’

Subject pronouns can be used instead of nouns in adjective clauses. The same stative verb is used to describe both singular and plural pronouns. In the adjective clauses below, the same stative verb **tuur** is used to describe all the singular subject pronouns and **tuure** describes all the plural subject pronouns.

Adjective clause		Equative clause			
<u>Tuur</u>	na.	<u>Keeni</u>	na	tuura.	‘I am short.’
<u>Tuur</u>	niiā.	<u>Eeni</u>	niiā	tuura.	‘You are short.’
<u>Tuur</u>	nē.	<u>Ēēn</u>	nē	tuura.	‘He is short.’

²⁵ In stative verbs, there is no distinction between completive and incompletive.

<u>Tuure</u>	naaga.	<u>Keegĩnna</u>	naaga	tuure.	‘We are short.’
<u>Tuure</u>	naaga.	<u>Keegĩnna</u>	naaga	tuure.	‘We are short.’
<u>Tuure</u>	niigia.	<u>Eggĩnnu</u>	niigia	tuure.	‘You are short.’
<u>Tuure</u>	něěgě.	<u>Ěěn</u>	něěgě	tuure.	‘They are short.’

Equative clauses with the verb **ěěn** ‘be, is, are’ can be used for the same meaning. In the equative clauses above, the verb **ěěn** changes with the subject pronoun. The singular adjective **tuura** ‘short’ is used with the singular pronouns **na**, **niia**, **ně**. The plural adjective **tuure** ‘short’ is used with the plural pronouns **naaga**, **niigia**, **něěgě**.

In the lesson on possessive pronouns, we learned that possessive pronouns can also be used as stative verbs. In (5), the singular stative verb **cannĩ** ‘mine’ is used with **goryiaiti** ‘thief’. In (6), the plural stative verb **cĩganĩk** ‘mine’ is used with the plural noun **goryiaha** ‘thieves’. There are other possessive pronouns used as stative verbs listed in the earlier lesson.

- (5) Cannĩ goryiaiti. ‘The thief is mine.’
(6) Cĩganĩk goryiaha. ‘The thieves are mine.’

Exercise 15

For each of the following clauses, underline the verb. Then, in the blank _____ to the left, write ‘equate’ if it is an equative clause, write ‘present’ if it is a presentation clause, and write ‘adject’ if it is an adjective clause.

_____	Avĩ balna eeti ĩmma.	‘There was a certain person.’
_____	Een eeti dõfĩt.	‘The person is a man.’
_____	Avu nyaapõ.	There was the hare.
_____	Arũgi kĩbaalĩcĩ coo.	‘This bird is alive.’
_____	Een coo kělēgĩt cĩ jakimi.	‘This is a huge animal.’
_____	Abiri balna kěēt neccie.	‘That tree was ripe.’
_____	Een ně et cĩ egenyi.	‘He was a clever person.’
_____	Aati dõdõlĩa cĩk ěěn ramma.	‘There were two children.’
_____	Lěěngěri thũgũumi	‘The buttock is small.’

Relative clauses

The relative connectors **cĩ** and **cĩk**, **wu** and **wuk**, **wu ba** and **wuk balna** ‘that, which, who,

of' are used to make relative clauses. These connectors are in singular and plural pairs. The connector **cī** introduces a phrase or clause that identifies a previous *singular* noun. This means it shows which now is talked about since it is a certain noun and not another noun. Below, the phrase **cī bōwōlo** 'of tortoise' identifies which **ahat** 'food' is talked about. It is the **ahat** belonging to the **bōwōlo** and not different **ahat** belonging to another animal.

Īcīn ngaa ahat [**cī** bōwōlo]. Woman saw the food of the tortoise.

Īcīn ngaa aheenin [**cīk** bōwōluanu]. Woman saw the foods of the tortoises.

The connector **cīk** introduces a phrase or clause that identifies a previous *plural* noun. The phrase **cīk bōwōluanu** 'of tortoises' identifies which **aheenin** 'foods' are talked about. It is the **aheenin** belonging to the **bōwōluanu** and not different **aheenin** belonging to other animals.

The relative connectors can introduce a phrase or a clause. **Cīk obbitik** 'that big' is an adjective *phrase* and does not have a verb. **Cīk ayak otoo** 'that have horns' is a *clause* since it has the verb **ayak** 'have'.

Ijinit kēlēgē [**cīk** obbitik] ko, entek ne . . . Animals that are big asked and said . . .

Ūrūmētē nyaapō kī kēlēgē [**cīk ayak** otoo]. Hare gathered with animals that have horns.

Other pairs of singular and plural connectors are shown below. The difference in the pairs is when the noun belongs to someone or is owned by someone. The pair **cī, cīk** shows the noun is owned now. The pair **wu, wuk** shows the noun was recently owned. The pair **wu ba, wuk balna** shows the pair was owned in the past.

Objects	cī	wu	wu ba	Singular
	cīk	wuk	wuk balna	Plural
Subjects	cī	wu	wu ba	Singular
	cīk	wuk	wuk balna	Plural
Locations	īcī	wu	wu ba	Singular
	īcīk	wuk	wuk balna	Plural
	'owns now'	'recently owned'	'owned in the past'	

In the examples below, the three *singular* connectors **cī, wu, wu ba** for objects are compared. Then, the three *plural* connectors **cīk, wuk, wuk balna** for objects are compared.

Object singular connectors

Īcīn ngaa ahat [**cī** bōwōlo].

Woman saw food of tortoise.

Īcīn ngaa ahat [**wu** bōwōlo].

Woman saw recent food of tortoise.

Īcīn ngaa ahat [**wu ba** bōwōlo].

Woman saw past food of tortoise.

Object plural connectors

Īcīn ngaa aheenin [**cīk** bōwōluanu].

Woman saw foods of tortoises.

Īcīn ngaa aheenin [**wuk** bōwōluanu].

Woman saw recent foods of tortoises.

Īcīn ngaa aheenin [**wuk balna** bōwōluanu]. Woman saw past foods of tortoises.

The same connectors can also be used to describe nouns that are subjects.

Subject singular connectors

Avī ahat [**cī** bōwōlo]. There was food of tortoise.
Avī ahat [**wu** bōwōlo]. There was recent food of tortoise.
Avī ahat [**wu ba** bōwōlo]. There was past food of tortoise.

Subject plural connectors

Aati aheenina [**cīk** bōwōluanu]. There were foods of tortoises.
Aati aheenina [**wuk** bōwōluanu]. There were recent foods of tortoises.
Aati aheenina [**wuk balna** bōwōluanu]. There were past foods of tortoises.

The connectors **īcī**, **īcīk** are used instead of **cī**, **cīk** to describe nouns that are locations.
The other two pairs of connectors for locations are the same as with objects and subjects.

Location singular connectors

Avu ngaa joonui ahata [**īcī** bōwōlo]. Woman near food of tortoise.
Avu ngaa joonui ahata [**wu** bōwōlo]. Woman near recent food of tortoise.
Avu ngaa joonui ahata [**wu ba** bōwōlo]. Woman near past food of tortoise.

Location plural connectors

Avu ngaa joonui aheeninei [**īcīk** bōwōluanu]. Woman near foods of tortoises.
Avu ngaa joonui aheeninei [**wuk** bōwōluanu]. Woman near recent foods of tortoises.
Avu ngaa joonui aheeninei [**wuk balna** bōwōluanu]. Woman near past foods of tortoises.

Exercise 16

In the sentences below, circle all relative connectors. Then put brackets [] around all relative phrases and clauses following the connector. Then underline which noun is identified by the relative phrase or clause. If there is a verb in the relative clause, underline that verb twice. In the blank to the left, write 'phrase' if there is a relative phrase. Write 'clause' if there is a relative clause. The first one has been done as an example.

_____	clause Kēēta coo avī <u>eeti</u> tidiina (<u>cī</u> ēēn dōfīt]. In tree person sat who was man.
_____	Ayak balna kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo tienit. Animals that have horns had feast.
_____	Ūrūmtē kī makayyioit nyakamuranya cīk kabbīrrēnu tammutiddina natē. They stayed with boss of relatives that are wasps in the sky.
_____	Mēēli kēlēgē cīk thēk balna wūk ayak otoo doo. There many animals that indeed that had horns.

_____	“Kadimani gimma cī ēēn vōlōng.”	“I do something which called lie.”
_____	Īthōng ivitia kēlēgē cīk ēēn tur	And animals that were five came
_____	odolanit kēlēgē cīk obbitik ko.	and reached animals that big.
_____	Ajaa kēlēgē wūk athii	The animals which don’t
	cī ayak otoo ēē.	that have horns came.

Types of Clauses with Relative Clauses

In this lesson, we learn that many types of clauses can be said in a different way using a relative clause.

There is about same meaning when a verb comes first in the sentence or when the verb is in a relative clause following the subject or object at the beginning of the sentence.

Verb first

Aduwa Peturu Longole iyainit coo.
‘Peter Longole tells this story.’

Verb in relative clause following object

Iyainit cī aduwa Peturu Longole coo.
‘This story is told by Peter Longole.’

In the sentences above, the verb **aduwa** ‘tell’ is first in one sentence, but in the relative clause **cī aduwa Peturu Longole** in the other. The relative clause follows the object **iyainit** ‘story’ which begins the sentence. Both sentences have about the same meaning.

In the sentences below, the verb **arūgi** ‘is alive’ is first in one sentence, but in the relative clause **cī arūgi** in the other.

Verb first

Arūgi kībaalīcī coo.
‘This bird is alive.’

Verb in relative clause following subject

Kībaalīc cī arūgi coo.
‘This bird is alive/This is an alive bird.’

The relative clause follows the subject **kībaalīc** ‘bird’ which begins the sentence. In this position, **kībaalīc** has no subject suffix and is in object (accusative) case.

In the sentences below, the verb **adim** ‘take’ is first in one sentence, but in the relative clause **cī adim** in the other. The relative clause follows the subject **ngēnē** ‘who’.

Verb first

Adim ngēnē narērūngī cannī?
“Who took my broom?”

Verb in relative clause following subject

Ngēnē cī adim narērūngī cannī?
“Who was it that took my broom?”

In the equative sentences below, the verb **ēēn** ‘be, is’ is first in one sentence, but in the relative clause **cī ēēn** in the other. The relative clause follows the subject **et** ‘person’. In this position, **et** has no subject suffix and is in accusative case.

Verb first

Ēēn eeti dōtīt.
‘The person is a man.’

Verb in relative clause following subject

Et cī ēēn dōtīt.
‘The person is a man’

In equative sentences where there is already a relative clause, the verb **ěēn** is left out of the relative clause when it follows a subject or object at the beginning of the sentence.

Verb first	Verb left out of relative clause
<u>Ěēn</u> coo kēlēgīt cī jakimi.	Kēlēgīt cī jakimi coo.
‘This is a huge animal.’	‘This animal is huge/This is a huge animal.’

In the equative sentences above, the verb **ěēn** is first in one sentence, but left out of the the relative clause **cī jakimi** in the other. The relative clause follows the object **kēlēgīt** ‘animal’. Since there is already a relative clause in the sentence, the verb **ěēn** is left out of the relative clause.

In the equative sentences below, the verb **ěēn** is first in one sentence, but left out of the the relative clause **cīk ayak otoo wo** in the other.

Verb first	Verb left out of relative clause
<u>Ěēn</u> kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo wo, kithiwaneeta.	Kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo wo , kithiwaneeta.
‘The animals that have horns are buffalos.’	‘The animals that have horns are buffalos.’

The relative clause follows the subject **kēlēgē** ‘animals’. Since there is already a relative clause in the sentence, the verb **ěēn** is left out of the relative clause.

Exercise 17

Each of the sentences below have a relative clause following a subject or object. Write each sentence in the blank to have the same meaning as the sentence, but with the verb first. The first one has been done as an example.

<u>Aduwa Lokio Toukono iyainit coo.</u>	Iyainit cī aduwa Lokio Toukono coo. ‘This story is told by Lokio Toukono.’
_____	“Uwui, nyia cī ěbēli niia wo?” “Hey, what are you singing?”
_____	Et cī ěēn dōtīt. ‘The person is a man’
_____	Īnōōnō thī cī yōkō acinnu niigia atieni eeta atik ngaai ramma wo. ‘That is why you see that men marry two wives.’

Adjectives

In this lesson, we learn that the suffixes **-e, -te, -i, -ti, -tie** are added to certain stative verbs when the subject is plural. Adjectives give information about nouns. They follow

cī or **cīk** and come from stative verbs. The suffix **-k** shows that an adjective is plural. The suffixes **-tini**, **-theti**, and **-thiti** show that an adjective has become a noun.

Stative verbs

Stative verbs describe a state or the way things are. In (1), the stative verb **jakim** ‘is huge’ tells the way the baboon is. The noun **lottiima** ‘baboon’ is a singular subject.

- (1) Jakim lottiima. ‘The baboon is huge.’
 (2) Jakime lottiimuana. ‘The baboons are huge.’

In (2), the verb **jakime** has the plural suffix **-e** to match the plural subject **lottiimuana**.

In the following sentences, other stative verbs add a plural suffix for plural subjects. The plural suffix is usually **-e** or **-ti**. In a few verbs, the stative plural suffix is **-te**, **-i**, **-tie**.

Singular subject	Plural subject	
<u>Jakim</u> lottiima.	<u>Jakime</u> lottiimuana.	‘The baboon is huge.’
<u>Patdac</u> mana.	<u>Patdace</u> maneena.	‘The garden is spacious.’
<u>Lēngēr</u> kēlēgīti.	<u>Lēngērē</u> kēlēgē.	‘The animal <u>is small</u> .’
<u>Tuur</u> eeti.	<u>Tuure</u> eeta.	‘The man <u>is short</u> .’
<u>Lūdūc</u> gōōl.	<u>Lūdūce</u> gooliowa.	‘The path <u>is narrow</u> .’
<u>Ngabur</u> gōōl.	<u>Ngabure</u> gooliowa.	‘The path <u>is wide</u> .’
<u>Dic</u> balangi.	<u>Dice</u> balanguana.	‘The salt <u>is minuscule</u> .’
<u>Ollia</u> tang.	<u>Ollie</u> tīna.	‘The cow <u>is black</u> .’
<u>Cullak</u> kēēt.	<u>Cullae</u> kēēna.	‘The tree <u>is green</u> .’
<u>Merik</u> nyēgēra.	<u>Merie</u> nyēgēruana.	‘The fruit <u>is red</u> .’
<u>Maan</u> lanyīti.	<u>Maanti</u> lanyītuana.	‘The light <u>is yellow</u> .’
<u>Uun</u> dīla.	<u>Uunti</u> dīlanya.	‘The spear <u>is long</u> .’
<u>Gērthā</u> mērtīa.	<u>Gērthē</u> mērtēēna.	‘The beer <u>is bad</u> .’
<u>Maka</u> eeti.	<u>Makate</u> eeta.	‘The man <u>is huge</u> .’
<u>Vōr</u> tang.	<u>Vōri</u> tīna.	‘The cow <u>is white</u> .’
<u>Obua</u> kēlēgīti	<u>Obitie</u> kēlēgē.	‘The animal <u>is big</u> .’

Stative verbs do not have the same suffixes, prefixes or forms as other verbs. Stative verbs only have one singular form (such as **jakim**) and one plural form (such as **jakime**). Other verbs may have two singular forms (such as **adīm**, **īdīm**) and two plural forms (such as **adim**, **īdimit**) with different prefixes and suffixes than stative verbs.

Stative verb		Regular verb	
<u>Jakim</u> lottiima.	‘The baboon is huge.’	<u>Adim</u> lottiim ahat.	‘The baboon just took food.’
<u>Jakime</u> lottiimuana.	‘The baboons are huge.’	<u>Adim</u> lottiimuana ahat.	‘The baboons just took food.’
		<u>Idim</u> lottiim ahat.	‘The baboon took food.’

Idimit lottiimuana ahat. ‘The baboons took food.’

The same stative verb **jakim** ‘is huge’ is used to describe all the subject pronouns. However, regular verbs have different prefixes and suffixes depending on the subject pronoun doing the action.

Stative verb			Regular verb		
<u>Jakim</u>	na.	‘I am huge.’	<u>Kadimi</u>	na	ahat. ‘I take food.’
<u>Jakim</u>	nii.	‘You are huge.’	<u>Adimi</u>	nii	ahat. ‘You take food.’
<u>Jakim</u>	nē.	‘He is huge.’	<u>Adim</u>	nē	ahat. ‘He take food.’
<u>Jakime</u>	naaga.	‘We are huge.’	<u>Kadim</u>	naaga	ahat. ‘We take food.’
<u>Jakime</u>	naaga.	‘We are huge.’	<u>Kadimnya</u>	naaga	ahat. ‘We take food.’
<u>Jakime</u>	niigia.	‘You are huge.’	<u>Adimnyu</u>	niigia	ahat. ‘You take food.’
<u>Jakime</u>	nēēgē.	‘They are huge.’	<u>Adim</u>	nēēgē	ahat. ‘They take food.’

Singular and plural adjectives

Adjectives come from stative verbs. An adjective describes or gives information about a noun. In sentence (3), **jakimi** ‘huge’ tells what kind of baboon the woman saw. The singular adjective **jakimi** follows **cī** and gives information about the singular noun **lottiim** ‘baboon’. It has the suffix **-i**.

- (3) Īcīn ngaa lottiim cī jakimi. ‘The woman saw **a huge baboon**.’
 (4) Īcīn ngaa lottiimua cīk jakimik. ‘The woman saw **huge baboons**.’

In (4) the plural adjective **jakimik** has the plural suffix **-ik**. It follows **cīk** and describes the plural noun **lottiimua**. Adjectives always follow **cī** or **cīk** and add the plural suffix **-ik** when describing a plural noun.

The following adjectives and nouns can take the place of **lottiim cī jakimi** in sentence (3) or **lottiimua cīk jakimik** in sentence (4). Most of the singular adjectives have the suffix **-i** and most of the plural adjectives have the plural suffix **-ik**. The **cī** is connected to a few of the singular adjectives such as **cobbi**.

Singular adjectives	Plural adjectives	
lottiim cī <u>jakimi</u>	lottiimua cīk <u>jakimik</u>	‘ <u>huge</u> baboon’
mana cī <u>patdaci</u>	maneen cīk <u>patdacik</u>	‘ <u>spacious</u> garden’
kēlēgīt cī <u>lēēngērī</u>	kēlēgē cīk <u>lēēngērīk</u>	‘ <u>small</u> animal’
et cī <u>tuuri</u>	et cīk <u>tuurik</u>	‘ <u>short</u> man’
gōōl cī <u>lūdūcī</u>	gooliok cīk <u>lūdūcīk</u>	‘ <u>narrow</u> path’
gōōl cī <u>ngaburi</u>	gooliok cīk <u>ngaburik</u>	‘ <u>wide</u> path’
bōwōl cī <u>maaci</u>	bōwōlua cīk <u>maacik</u>	‘ <u>male</u> tortoise’
balang cī <u>dīcī</u>	balangua cīk <u>kīdīk</u>	‘ <u>some</u> salt’
tang cī <u>vōrī</u>	tīn cīk <u>vōrīk</u>	‘ <u>white</u> cow’
tang <u>colli</u>	tīn cīk <u>ollīk</u>	‘ <u>black</u> cow’

kêēt cī cūllaī	kêēn cīk cūllaīk	‘green tree’
nyēgēr cī merihi	nyēgērua cīk merihik	‘red fruit’
et cī maki	et cīk makatik	‘huge man’
mērtē cī gērthē	mērtēēn cīk gērthēk	‘bad beer’
lanyīt cī maani	lanyītua cīk maantik	‘yellow light’
dīla cī uuni	dīlanya cīk uuntik	‘long spear’
kēlēgīt cobbi	kēlēgē cīk obbitik	‘big animal’

In (3) and (4), the adjectives describe nouns that are objects. In (5) and (6), the adjectives describe nouns that are subjects, and in (7) and (8), the adjectives describe nouns that are locations. Although the tone is different, the adjectives are spelled the same.

- | | |
|--|--|
| (3) Īcīn ngaa lottiim cī <u>jakimi</u> . | ‘The woman saw a <u>huge</u> baboon.’ |
| (4) Īcīn ngaa lottiimua cīk <u>jakimik</u> . | ‘The woman saw <u>huge</u> baboons.’ |
| (5) Īcīn lottiimi cī <u>jakimi</u> ngaa. | ‘There was a <u>huge</u> baboon.’ |
| (6) Īcīnīt lottiimuana cīk <u>jakimik</u> ngaa. | ‘There were <u>huge</u> baboons.’ |
| (7) Avu ngaa ōjōōn lottiima cī <u>jakimi</u> . | ‘The woman stayed near the <u>huge</u> baboon.’ |
| (8) Avu ngaa ōjōōn lottiimuanī īcīk <u>jakimik</u> . | ‘The woman stayed near the <u>huge</u> baboons.’ |

Adjectival nouns

Adjectives can be made into nouns by adding suffixes. In (10), the adjective **gērthē** becomes the subject noun **gērthētini** by adding the suffix **-tini**.

- | | |
|---|---|
| (9) <u>Jakim</u> lottiima. | ‘The baboon is huge.’ |
| (10) Avī balna <u>jakimeneti</u> ciitha iico. | ‘There was <u>hugeness</u> inside the house.’ |

Adjectives that become nouns are called adjectival nouns. Most of the following adjectival nouns can take the place of **jakimeneti** in sentence (10) and can have the suffixes **-eneti**, **-ineti**, **-theti**, **-thiti**, or **-itini**, some of which depend on the root vowel. The suffixes **-eneti** and **-theti** follow the vowels **i, ī, u, ū**. The suffixes **-ineti** and **-thiti** follow the vowels **e, ē, o, ō, a**. The suffix **-itini** follows any vowel.

Singular stative verbs	Adjectival nouns	Suffix and root vowel
<u>Jakim</u> lottiima	jakimeneti	‘hugeness’ -eneti with {i, ī, u, ū}
<u>Mutuny</u> kabathi	mutunyeneti	‘dullness’
<u>Patdac</u> mana	patdacineti	‘spaciousness’ -ineti with {e, ē, o, ō, a}
<u>Wuun</u> dīla.	wuuntheti	‘longness’ -theti with {i, ī, u, ū}
<u>Tuur</u> eeti.	tuurtheti	‘shortness’
<u>Ngabur</u> gōōl.	ngaburtheti	‘wideness’
<u>Dic</u> balangi.	kīdīctheti	‘fewness’
<u>Maka</u> eeti.	makathiti	‘hugeness’ -thiti with {e, ē, o, ō, a}
<u>Lūdūc</u> gōōl.	luducitini	‘narrowness’
<u>Gērtha</u> mērtīa.	gērthitini	‘badness’ -itini with any vowel
<u>Lēēngēr</u> kēlēgīti.	lēēngērītini	‘smallness’

<u>Vōr</u> tang.	vōritini	‘whiteness’
<u>Ollia</u> tang.	ollitini	‘blackness’
<u>Cullak</u> kēēt.	cullaitini	‘greenness’
<u>Merik</u> nyēgēra.	meriitini	‘redness’
<u>Maan</u> lanyīti.	maanitini	‘yellowness’

Exercise 18

In the following sentences, underline all verbs, draw a circle around all adjectives, and draw a box around all adjectival nouns.

īthōng kī kūrūgūmīt rūgūmōn cobbi gimma nōkō	‘and they danced a big dance like that’
ongollingce eeta īī vori pēēr	‘the people became very white’
uduktiak eeta kēlēgē cīk obbitik entek ne,	‘the people told the big animals saying,’
Ayahana gii cī lēēngērī thūgūūmi	‘something on which the buttock is small brought me (here)’
Avī balna patdacineti ciitha iico.	‘Was spaciousness inside house.’
“Koot thīna gaama aneeta thūgūūm ngīī lēēngēri wo.”	“Hold onto me on the buttock, on the place that is small.”
Ikiyia idima eeti coo looron cī uuni	‘this person came and took a long rope’
utuvuyia nēēgē kēlēgē cīk kīdīk ko entek ne,	‘they called the small animals saying, ‘

Number adjectives

Number adjectives describe nouns with a number. They follow nouns, but do not follow **cī** or **cīk** like other adjectives. In (1), the number **codoi** ‘one’ describes the singular noun **aweenit** ‘rat’.

- (1) Utdukaak eeti aweenit **codoi** ‘The man threw **one** rat.’
 (2) Utdukaak eeti awēēn **ramma**. ‘The man threw **two** rats.’

In (2), the number **ramma** ‘two’ describes the plural noun **awēēn**. The other numbers are listed below.

aweenit	codoi	‘one rat’
awēēn	ramma	‘two rats’
awēēn	iyyo	‘three rats’
awēēn	wēc	‘four rats’
awēēn	tur	‘five rats’

awēēn	torkonom	‘six rats’
awēēn	turgerem	‘seven rats’
awēēn	turgi	‘eighth rats’
awēēn	torkowēc	‘nine rats’
awēēn	ōmōtō	‘ten rats’

Demonstrative and Indefinite Adjectives

In a previous lesson, we learned about demonstrative and indefinite pronouns. The demonstrative and indefinite words can also be used as adjectives to describe nouns. Demonstrative adjectives describe nouns by pointing or showing. Indefinite adjectives describe nouns that have not yet been mentioned. In this lesson, we learn about these adjectives used as objects, subjects, and locations.

Demonstrative adjectives, as well as demonstrative pronouns, have three distances. The singular demonstrative adjective **coo** ‘this’ describes a noun near the speaker. **Nico** ‘that’ describes a noun near the hearer. **Nīcē** ‘this’ describes a noun far from both the speaker and hearer.

Singular demonstrative adjectives

- Īcīn ngaa kēlēgīt **coo**. ‘The woman saw **this** animal (near speaker).’
 Īcīn ngaa kēlēgīt **nico**. ‘The woman saw **that** animal (near hearer).’
 Īcīn ngaa kēlēgīt **nīcē**. ‘The woman saw **that** animal (far from both).’

Plural demonstrative adjectives also have three distances.

Plural demonstrative adjectives

- Īcīn ngaa kēlēgē **ciko**. ‘The woman saw **these** animals (near speaker).’
 Īcīn ngaa kēlēgē **niiko**. ‘The woman saw **those** animals (near hearer).’
 Īcīn ngaa kēlēgē **nīkē**. ‘The woman saw **those** animals (far from both).’

Object demonstrative adjectives

Each demonstrative adjective can be used to describe objects such as in the clauses below:

- (1) Īcīn ngaa kēlēgīt coo. ‘The woman saw **this** animal.’
 (2) Īcīn ngaa kēlēgē ciko. ‘The woman saw **these** animals.’

The following singular demonstrative adjectives and nouns can take the place of **kēlēgīt coo** in sentence (1) and the plural demonstrative adjectives can take the place of **kēlēgē ciko** in sentence (2).

Object demonstrative pronouns

Singular		Plural	
kēlēgīt coo	[H]	‘ this ’	kēlēgē ciko [H,L] ‘ these ’ near speaker
kēlēgīt nico	[H,L]	‘ that ’	kēlēgē niiko [H,L] ‘ those ’ near hearer

kēlēgīt nīcē [H,H] ‘that’ kēlēgē nīkē [L,H] ‘those’ far from both

Subject demonstrative pronouns

Demonstrative adjectives can also be used to describe subjects, such as in the clauses below:

- (3) Avī kēlēgīti **coo**. ‘There is this animal.’
(4) Aati kēlēgē **ciko**. ‘There are these animals.’

The following singular demonstrative adjectives can take the place of **kēlēgīti coo** in sentence (3) and the plural demonstrative adjectives can take the place of **kēlēgē ciko** in sentence (4).

Subject demonstrative pronouns

Singular			Plural			
kēlēgīti coo	[L]	‘this’	kēlēgē ciko	[L,H]	‘these’	near speaker
kēlēgīti neccuo	[L,HL]	‘that’	---			near hearer
kēlēgīti neccie						
kēlēgīti nīcē	[H,L]	‘that’	kēlēgē nīkē	[L,H]	‘those’	far from both

Location demonstrative adjectives

Demonstrative adjectives can also be used to describe locations, such as in the clauses below:

- (5) Avu ngaa joonui kēlēgīta **iicoo**. ‘The woman was near this animal.’
(6) Avu ngaa joonui kēlēgēnei **iciko**. ‘The woman was near these animals.’

The following singular demonstrative adjectives can take the place of **kēlēgīta iicoo** in sentence (5) and the plural demonstrative adjectives can take the place of **kēlēgēnei iciko** in sentence (6).

Location demonstrative adjectives

Singular			Plural			
kēlēgīta iicoo	[H,L]	‘this’	kēlēgēnei iciko	[L,H,L]	‘these’	near speaker
kēlēgīta nico	[H,L]	‘that’	kēlēgēnei niiko	[H,L]	‘those’	near hearer
kēlēgīta nīcē	[H,L]	‘that’	kēlēgēnei nīkē	[H,L]	‘those’	far from both

Indefinite adjectives

Indefinite adjectives can be used for the first mention of a noun. They describe the noun as being one particular noun the speaker has in mind. Indefinite adjectives can also describe objects, subjects, and locations.

Object indefinite adjectives

- Īcīn ngaa kēlēgīt **īmma**. ‘The woman saw a certain animal.’
Īcīn ngaa kēlēgē **oogi**. ‘The woman saw certain animals.’

Subjects indefinite adjectives

Avĩ kēlēgĩti **ĩmma**.

‘There is my animal.’

Aati kēlēgē **guak**.

‘There are certain animals.’

Locations indefinite adjectives

Avu ngaa joonui kēlēgĩta **ĩmmanĩ**.

‘The woman was near a certain animal.’

Avu ngaa joonui kēlēgēnei **guantik**.

‘The woman was near certain animals.’

Indefinite adjectives are listed below along with their tone in brackets [].

Indefinite adjectives

	Singular		Plural		
Object	kēlēgĩt ĩmma	[H,H]	‘certain’	kēlēgē oogi	[L,H] ‘certain’
Subject	kēlēgĩti ĩmma	[L,L]	‘certain’	kēlēgē guak	[L] ‘certain’
Location	kēlēgĩta ĩmmanĩ	[L,H,L]	‘certain’	kēlēgēnei guantik	[LH,L] ‘certain’

Exercise 19

In the following sentences, underline number adjectives, draw a circle around demonstrative adjectives, and draw a box around indefinite adjectives.

Avĩ balna eeti ĩmma ĩthõng otod kēēta

‘There was certain person and he climbed a tree’

Een thĩ nēēgē ngaai ciko ramma.

‘They were these two women.’

Ũũk odolān kēēt ĩmma vurut,
abiri balna kēēt neccie.

‘She went and stayed under a certain tree, that tree was ripe.’

Adaak kēnnē kūthũũtha ngaa coo.

‘Then the ants bit this woman.’

“Kacũrtha koccia na kēlēgē ciko kūũ?”

“How will I defeat these animals?”

Ĩthõng ma ngĩ ivitia eeta guak,

‘And when other people came,’

Utuvuyia thēk kēlēgē cĩk ēēn tur wo,
ĩthõng addaĩt nēēgē kēlēgē nĩĩkē.

‘They called for the five animals, and they ate those animals.’

Ikiyia idima eeti coo kidongua iyyo cobbi õrrõt,

‘This person came and took three big drums,’

Locatives

Locatives give the location of nouns and follow those nouns. They do not change if the noun is plural. In (1) and (2), the locatives **vurut** ‘under’ and **vurtia** ‘under’ describe the location of the noun **kēēt** ‘tree’.

(1) Ũũk odolān ngaa kēēt vurut.

‘The woman went and arrived under a tree.’

(2) Ongi ngaa kēēta vurtia.

‘The woman slept under a tree.’

Locatives change when the nouns they describe are locations. In (1), **kēēt** is an object of the verb **odolan** ‘arrived’, and the object locative vurut is used. In (2), **kēēta** is a location of the verb **ongi** ‘slept’, and the location locative vurtia is used.

The object locatives and nouns below can take the place of **kēēt vurut** in (1). The location locatives and nouns below can take the place **kēēta vurtia** in (2).

Object locatives

kēēt vurut
kēēt tidiinu
et korgena
thiir looca
thiir icidiinu
ciith icitōni

Location locatives

kēēta vurtia ‘under a tree’
kēēta tidiina ‘up in a tree’
cetenei korgena ‘among men’
thiira loota ‘down a mountain’
thiira icidiinu ‘up a mountain’
ciitha icitōni ‘inside a house’

Adverbs

Adverbs describe or give information about verbs. They never change in form, but are always spelled and pronounced the same. The adverb **ōrrōt** ‘a lot’ tells how or in what way the hare **ōvōlōng** ‘deceives’.

Ōvōlōng nyaapō ōrrōt.

‘The hare deceives a lot.’

Most of the adverbs below can take the place of **ōrrōt** in the sentence above. There are manner, time, and place adverbs. Manner adverbs describe the way the action is done. Time adverbs describe the time of the action. Place adverbs describe the place of the action.

Manner adverbs

ōrrōt ‘a lot, much’
noko ‘again’
kiir ‘exactly’
kētē ‘like this’
kiyokowe ‘exactly like that’
pee ‘really’
thēk ‘indeed’
būth ‘surely’
bai ‘might be’
tamanoko ‘quickly’
kīdīc ‘slowly’
gia ‘also, just’
nabō ‘also’
buu ‘also’

Time adverbs

gōō ‘sometimes’
yōkō ‘now’
bolowath ‘yesterday’

Place adverbs

reena ‘far’
joonui, ōjōōn ‘near’
natē ‘there’
ngato ‘here’
nato ‘there’

Exercise 20

In the following sentences, underline adverbs, draw a circle around object locatives, and draw a box around location locatives.

“Avĩ yõkõ gii cĩ athĩ võlõng wo nga?”	“Where is the thing called a lie now?”
Mẽeli thẽk nabõ kẽlẽgẽ cĩk athii cĩ ayak otoo.	‘The animals without horns were many indeed.’
Ngaatĩ athikni eeta ciko thõõth coo kêtẽ wo,	‘When the people hear this word like this,’
Ngaatĩ acĩnĩ itik et coo kuui ciitha cĩnnĩ ãcĩtõ.	‘When she say (him), she carried this man, taking him into her house.’
“Avĩ kõrõõgi cannie icidiinu.”	“My home is on the other side (of the mountain).”
“Uwui ayai gia gõõ niia buu otoo?”	“Have you always had horns?”
Adima nẽ nyaapõ ãlẽ cĩnnĩ kĩ võlõng thẽk kiir ne.	‘The hare indeed took himself to be the true lie.’
Avu eeti kẽõta tidiina ãthõng uluccia loota.	‘The man stayed up in the tree and came down.’
Õũk ngaa coo ciitha oko acĩn doolec ciitha natẽ.	‘This woman went in the house to see there the child in the house.’

Question (Interogative) Pronouns

Question (interrogative) pronouns are used to ask questions. They take the place of unknown nouns, adjectives, objects, locations, and adverbs.

Ngẽnẽ - Õngẽnẽ ‘Who - Whom’

Sentence (1) is statement. Sentences (2) and (3) are questions.

(1) Uruk <u>eeti</u> kẽlẽgẽ.	‘ <u>A man</u> killed animals.’
(2) Uruk ngẽnẽ kẽlẽgẽ? [L,L]	‘ Who killed animals?’
(3) Ngẽnẽ cĩ uruk kẽlẽgẽ? [L,L]	‘ Who was it that killed animals?’

In (1), the subject is **eeti** ‘man’. The questions in (2) and (3) ask about the subject in (1). The question pronoun **ngẽnẽ** takes the place of the subject noun eeti in (1).

Sentence (4) is statement. Sentence (5) is a question.

(4) Uruk eeti kẽlẽgẽ cĩk <u>ngaanu</u> .	‘A man killed animals for <u>a woman</u> .’
(5) Aruk eeti kẽlẽgẽ cĩk ngẽnẽ ? [H,H]	‘A man killed animals for whom ?’

In (5) the question pronoun **ngẽnẽ** takes the place of the possessive ngaanu ‘woman’ in (4). The pronoun **ngẽnẽ** takes the place of a *singular* noun in (2), (3) and (5).

In (7) and (8), **ōngēnē** take the place of the subject eeta ‘people’ in (6).

- (6) Uruit eeta kēlēgē. ‘Men killed animals.’
(7) Uruit **ōngēnē** kēlēgē? [L,H,H] ‘**Who** killed animals?’
(8) **Ōngēnē** cī uruit kēlēgē? [L,H,H] ‘**Who** was it that killed animals?’

In (10), **ōngēnē** take the place of the possessive ngaawak in (9).

- (9) Uruk eeti kēlēgē cīk ngaawak. ‘A man killed animals for women.’
(10) Aruk eeti kēlēgē cīk **ōngēnē**? [L,H,H] ‘A man killed animals for **whom**?’

In (7), (8) and (10), the pronoun **ōngēnē** takes the place of a *plural* noun.

Jang - Cigang ‘Which’

In (12) the question pronoun **jang** ‘which’ takes the place of the *singular subject adjective nyati* ‘older’ in (11).

- (11) Uruk eeti cī nyati kēlēgē. ‘An older man killed animals.’
(12) Et **jang** cī uruk kēlēgē? ‘**Which** man killed animals?’

In (14) the question pronoun **cijang** takes the place of the *plural subject adjective nyatik* in (13).

- (13) Uruit eeta cīk nyatik kēlēgē. ‘Older men killed animals.’
(14) Et **cijang** cīk uruit kēlēgē? ‘**Which** men killed animals?’

Nyia ‘What, Why’

In (16) and (18) the question pronoun **nyia** ‘what’ takes the place of the *singular object kēlēgīt* in (15) and the *plural object kēlēgē* in (17).

- (15) Uruk eeti kēlēgīt. ‘A man killed an animal.’
(16) Aruk eeti **nyia**? [L] ‘**What** did a man kill?’
(17) Uruk eeti kēlēgē. ‘A man killed animals.’
(18) Aruk eeti **nyia**? [L] ‘**What** did a man kill?’

In (20) the question pronoun **nyia** ‘why’ takes the place of the clause nyatarka adak inōnō boobo in (19).

- (19) Uruk eeti kēlēgīt ngatarka adak inōnō boobo. ‘A man killed an animal because he was hungry.’
(20) Aruk eeti kēlēgīt **nyia**? [L] ‘**Why** did a man kill an animal?’

Nga ‘Where’

In (22) and (24) the question pronoun **nga** ‘where’ takes the place of the *singular location* **thiira** ‘mountain’ in (21) and the *plural location* **thirowei** in (23).

- (21) Uruk eeti kēlēgīt thiira. ‘A man killed an animal on the mountain.’
(22) Uruk eeti kēlēgīt **nga**? [H] ‘**Where** did a man kill an animal?’
- (23) Uruk eeti kēlēgē thirowei
tidiina. ‘A man killed animals up on the mountains.’
(24) Uruk eeti kēlēgē **nga**? [H] ‘**Where** did a man kill animals?’

Vangan ‘When’

In (26) the question pronoun **vangan** ‘when’ takes the place of the *time adverb* **bolowath** ‘yesterday’ in (25).

- (25) Uruk eeti kēlēgīt bolowath. ‘A man killed an animal yesterday.’
(26) Uruk eeti kēlēgīt **vangan**? ‘**When** did a man kill an animal?’

Kūū ‘How’

In (28) the question pronoun **kūū** ‘how’ takes the place of the *manner adverb* **tamonoko** ‘quickly’ in (27).

- (27) Uruk eeti kēlēgīt tamonoko. ‘A man killed an animal quickly.’
(28) Uruk eeti kēlēgīt **kūū**? ‘**How** did a man kill an animal?’

Yes-No questions

For some questions, the answers can only be “yes” or “no”. These kinds of questions do not use question pronouns. Instead, one of the words in the question has an extra high tone. In the statement of (29), the word **eeti** ‘person’ has High, Low tone. In the question of (30), **eeti** has extra High, Low tone.

- (29) Īcīn **eeti** ngaa. [H,L] ‘The man saw the woman.’
(30) Īcīn **eeti** ngaa? [exH,L] ‘Did the man see the woman?’

In the statement of (31), the word **Uduit** ‘ate’ has Low, High tone. In the question of (32), **Uduit** has Low, extra High tone.

- (31) **Uduit** dōōlīa ahat. [L,H] ‘The children ate the food.’
(32) **Uduit** dōōlīa ahat? [L,exH] ‘Did the children eat the food?’

Exercise 21

In the following lines, underline all verbs and draw a circle around all question pronouns.

In the blank _____ to the left, write the kind of word that the question pronoun replaces. The answer could be subject, object, location, adverb, or clause.

_____	“Kacūrtha koccia na kēlēgē ciko kūū?”	“How can I defeat these animals?”
_____	“Yei laang nyia cī adimani niia wo?”	“Please friend, what is this that you are doing?”
_____	“Avī yōkō gii cī athī vōlōng wo nga?”	“Where is the thing which is called a ‘lie’ now?”
_____	“Uwui kūū nabō laang kacīn gōō gii kūū?”	“Oh, how friend, can we see the thing, how?”
_____	“Ngēnē cī adim narērūngi cannī?”	“Who took my broom?”
_____	“Narērūngi cannī nga?”	“Where is my broom?”
_____	“Yōkō no niia ēēni nyia?”	“Who are you now?”

Verb Subject Markers with Final Consonants

In the lesson on verbs, we learned that verbs can be completive like **idim** ‘took’ or incompletive like **adim** ‘takes’.

Idim eeti dōllīan. ‘Man **took** wax.’
Adim eeti dōllīan. ‘Man **just now took** wax.’

With the completive verb **idim** ‘took’, the action is thought of as being finished or complete. A prefix **i-** with the same vowel as in the verb attaches to completive verbs. In the incompletive verb **adim** ‘takes’, the action is thought of as continuing, or still going on. A prefix **a-** attaches to some incompletive verbs.

In the lesson on pronouns, we learned that a verb changes with the subject pronoun. For example, when we say **karumj na eeta** ‘I am joining people’, the **ka-** and **-i** are attached to the verb because of the subject **na** ‘I’. When we say, **arumnyu niigia eeta** ‘you(pl) are joining people’, the **-nyu** is attached to the verb because of the subject **niigia** ‘you(pl)’. Below, all subject pronouns are used with both incompletive and completive forms of the verb **rūmū** ‘join’.

Incompletive			Completive			‘join’
karumi	na	eeta	kūrūma	na	eeta	‘I’
arumi	niia	eeta	urumu	niia	eeta	‘You(sg)’
arūm	nē	eeta	ūrūm	nē	eeta	‘(S)he’
karūm	naaga	eeta	kūrūmīt	naaga	eeta	‘We (& you)’
karūmnya	naaga	eeta	kūrūmta	naaga	eeta	‘We (not you)’
arumnyu	niigia	eeta	urumtu	niigia	eeta	‘You(pl)’
arūm	nēēgē	eeta	ūrūmīt	nēēgē	eeta	‘They’

Seven different subjects can be marked on a verb. They are called verb subject markers. The prefix **k-** always comes at the beginnings of verbs to mark the subjects **na** ‘I’ and **naaga** ‘we’. Suffixes also come at the ends of verbs to mark subjects. The prefixes and suffixes are sometimes different according to whether the verb is incomplete or complete. The most common set of suffixes is the following:

Subject markers on verbs with final consonants						
Incomplete			Complete			
Prefix	Suffix	Pronoun	Prefix	Suffix	Pronoun	
ka-	-i	na	kV-	-a	na	‘I’
a-	-i	niiia	V-	-u	niiia	‘You(sg)’
a-		nē	V-		nē	‘(S)he’
ka-		naaga	kV-	-īt, -ito	naaga	‘we (& you)’
ka-	-Ca	naaga	kV-	-Ca	naaga	‘we (not you)’
a-	-Cu	niigia	V-	-Cu	niigia	‘You(pl)’
a-		nēēgē	V-	-īt, -ito	nēēgē	‘They’

In the prefix, the letter V represents the first vowel of the verb. In the suffix, the letter C represents a consonant that depends on the last consonant of the verb, or is sometimes the vowel **i**.

In the incomplete form, if the verb has the vowel **i**, **ī**, **u**, or **ū**, the prefix vowel is **a-**. If the verb has any other vowel (**e**, **ē**, **o**, **ō**, **a**), the prefix vowel is the same as the verb vowel. For example, in the verb **acīn** ‘see’, **athim** ‘abstain’, **arūm** ‘join’, **awum** ‘touch’, the prefix vowel is **a-**. In the verbs **ēcēb** ‘tie’, **edec** ‘answer’, **ōwōb** ‘follow’, **ocok** ‘soak’, **agam** ‘hold’, the prefix vowel is the same as the verb vowel. In the complete form, the prefix vowel is always the same as the verb vowel.

Vowel	Incomplete		Complete		
ī	kacini	na	kīcīna	na	‘I’ ‘see’
	acini	niiia	icīnu	niiia	‘you(sg)’
	acīn	nē	īcīn	nē	‘(s)he’
	kačīn	naaga	kīcīnīt	naaga	‘We (& you)’
	kačīnna	naaga	kīcīnta	naaga	‘We (not you)’
	acinnu	niigia	icīntu	niigia	‘you(pl)’
	acīn	nēēgē	īcīnīt	nēēgē	‘they’
i	kathimi	na	kithima	na	‘I’ ‘abstain’
	athimi	niiia	ithimu	niiia	‘you(sg)’
	athim	nē	ithim	nē	‘(s)he’
	kathim	naaga	kithimit	naaga	‘We (& you)’
	kathimnya	naaga	kithimta	naaga	‘We (not you)’
	athimnyu	niigia	ithimtu	niigia	‘you(pl)’
	athim	nēēgē	ithimit	nēēgē	‘they’
ū	karumi	na	kūrūma	na	‘I’ ‘join’
	arumi	niiia	urumu	niiia	‘you(sg)’
	arūm	nē	ūrūm	nē	‘(s)he’

	karūm karūmnya arumnyu arūm	naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kūrūmīt kūrūmta urumtu ūrūmīt	naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘We (& you)’ ‘We (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	
u	kawumi awumi awum kawum kawumnya awumnyu awum	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kuwuma uwumu uwum kuwumit kuwumta uwumtu uwumit	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘We (& you)’ ‘We (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘touch’
ē	kecebi ecebi ēcēb kēcēb kēcēbja ecebjū ēcēb	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kēcēba ecebu ēcēb kēcēbīt kēcēpta eceptu ēcēbīt	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘We (& you)’ ‘We (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘tie’
e	kedeci edeci edec kedec kedecca edeccu edec	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kedeca edecu edec kedecit kedecca edeccu edecit	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘We (& you)’ ‘We (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘answer’
ō	kowobi owobi ōwōb kōwōb kōwōbja owobjū ōwōb	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kōwōba owobu ōwōb kōwōbīt kōwōpta owoptu ōwōbīt	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘We (& you)’ ‘We (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘follow’
o	kocoi ocoi ocok kocok kocokca ocokcu ocok	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kocowa ocowu ocok kocoito kocokta ocoktu ocoito	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘We (& you)’ ‘We (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘soak’
a	kagami agami agam kagam kagamnya agamnyu agam	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kagama agamu agam kagamīt kagamta agamtu agamīt	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘We (& you)’ ‘We (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘hold’

Naaga ‘we’ and **niigia** ‘you(pl)’ subject suffixes on verbs depend on the last consonant of the verb. When the last consonant is **d, j, t, th, c, l**, the consonant is doubled in the incomplete forms (**kamuji naaga, amuju niigia**) and the completive **niigia** form (**umuju niigia**). However, the consonant is followed by **i** in the completive **naaga** form (**kumujia naaga**).

Consonant	Incomplete		Completive			
j	kamuji	na	kumuja	na	‘I’	‘soften’
	amuji	niia	umuju	niia	‘you(sg)’	
	amuji	nē	umuc	nē	‘(s)he’	
	kamuji	naaga	kumujit	naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kamujja	naaga	kumujia	naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	amuju	niigia	umuju	niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	amuji	nēēgē	umujit	nēēgē	‘they’	
d	kahadi	na	kahada	na	‘I’	‘hope’
	ahadi	niia	ahadu	niia	‘you(sg)’	
	ahad	nē	ahad	nē	‘(s)he’	
	kahad	naaga	kahadīt	naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kahadda	naaga	kahadia	naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	ahaddu	niigia	ahaddu	niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	ahad	nēēgē	ahadīt	nēēgē	‘they’	
t	kaluti	na	kūlūta	na	‘I’	‘accumulate’
	aluti	niia	ulutu	niia	‘you(sg)’	
	alūt	nē	ūlūt	nē	‘(s)he’	
	kalūt	naaga	kūlūtīt	naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kalūtta	naaga	kulutia	naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	aluttu	niigia	uluttu	niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	alūt	nēēgē	ūlūtīt	nēēgē	‘they’	
th	kegethi	na	kēgētha	na	‘I’	‘gnaw’
	egethi	niia	egethu	niia	‘you(sg)’	
	ēgēth	nē	ēgēth	nē	‘(s)he’	
	kēgēth	naaga	kēgēthīt	naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kēgēththa	naaga	kegethia	naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	egeththu	niigia	egeththu	niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	ēgēth	nēēgē	ēgēthīt	nēēgē	‘they’	
c	kedeci	na	kedeca	na	‘I’	‘answer’
	edeci	niia	edecu	niia	‘you(sg)’	
	edec	nē	edec	nē	‘(s)he’	
	kedec	naaga	kedecit	naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kedecca	naaga	kedecia	naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	edeccu	niigia	edeccu	niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	edec	nēēgē	edecit	nēēgē	‘they’	
l	katali	na	katala	na	‘I’	‘please’
	atali	niia	atalu	niia	‘you(sg)’	
	atal(i)	nē	atal	nē	‘(s)he’	

katal(i)	naaga	katalīt	naaga	‘we (& you)’
katal(a)	naaga	katalia	naaga	‘we (not you)’
atal(lu)	niigia	atal(lu)	niigia	‘you(pl)’
atal(i)	nēēgē	atalīt	nēēgē	‘they’

When the last consonant of the verb is **r** or **w**, the consonant is followed by **y** in the incomplete forms (**kabūyya naaga, abuyyu niigia**) and complete **niigia** form (**ubuyyu niigia**). However, the consonant is followed by **yi** in the complete **naaga** form (**kubuyyia naaga**).

Consonant	Incomplete		Completive			
r	kengeri	na	kēngēra	na	‘I’	‘divide’
	engeri	niia	engeru	niia	‘you(sg)’	
	ēngēr	nē	ēngēr	nē	‘(s)he’	
	kēngēr	naaga	kēngērīt	naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kēngērya	naaga	kengeryia	naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	engeryu	niigia	engeryu	niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	ēngēr	nēēgē	ēngērīt	nēēgē	‘they’	
w	kabu	na	kūbūwa	na	‘I’	‘cast spell’
	abu	niia	ubuwu	niia	‘you(sg)’	
	abū	nē	ūbū	nē	‘(s)he’	
	kabū	naaga	kubueco	naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kabūyya	naaga	kubuyyia	naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	abuyyu	niigia	ubuyyu	niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	abū	nēēgē	ubueco	nēēgē	‘they’	

When the last consonant of the verb is **ny**, the consonant is doubled in the incomplete forms (**kōngōnyya naaga, ongonnyu niigia**). The consonant is followed by **c** in the complete forms (**kōngōnyca naaga, ongonnyu niigia**).

Consonant	Incomplete		Completive			
ny	kongonyi	na	kōngōnya	na	‘I’	‘mix’
	ongonyi	niia	ongonyu	niia	‘you(sg)’	
	ōngōny	nē	ōngōny	nē	‘(s)he’	
	kōngōny	naaga	kōngōnyīt	naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kōngōnyya	naaga	kōngōnyca	naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	ongonnyu	niigia	ongonnyu	niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	ōngōny	nēēgē	ōngōnyīt	nēēgē	‘they’	

When the last consonant of the verb is **b, v, m, n, ng**, the consonant is followed by various different consonants (**j, y, ny, n**) in the incomplete forms. It is followed by **t** in the complete forms (**kēcēpta naaga, eceptu niigia**).

Consonant	Incomplete		Completive			
b	kecebi	na	kēcēba	na	‘I’	‘tie’

	ecebi ēcēb kēcēb kēcēbja ecēbju ēcēb	niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	ecebu ēcēb kēcēbīt kēcēpta eceptu ēcēbīt	niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’
v	kuuvi uuvi ūūv kūūv kūūvya uuvyu ūūv	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kūūva uuvu ūūv kūūvito kūūvta uuvtu ūūvito	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘point’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’
m	karumi arumi arūm karūm karūmnya arumnyu arūm	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kūrūma urumu ūrūm kūrūmīt kūrūmta urumtu ūrūmīt	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘join’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’
n	kacini acini acīn kacīn kacīnna acinnu acīn	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kīcīna icinu īcīn kīcīnīt kīcīnta icintu īcīnīt	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘see’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’
ng	kabungi abungi abung kabung kabungnya abungnyu abung	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kubunga ubungu ubung kubungīt kubungta ubungtu ubungīt	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘cover’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’

When the last consonant of the verb is **k** and verb vowel is **ū**, the **k** is followed by **n** in the incompleted forms (**karūkna naaga, aruknu niigia**). When the verb vowel is **ō**, the **k** is followed by **j** in the incompleted forms (**kōōkja naaga, ookju niigia**). When the last consonant of the verb is **k** and verb has any other vowel, the **k** is followed by **c** in the incompleted forms (**kadukca naaga, adukcu niigia**). In completed forms, the **k** is always followed by **t** (**kūrūkta naaga, uruktu niigia**).

Vowel + k	INCP	COMP	
ūk	karugi na arugi niia arūgi nē	kūrūga na urugu niia ūrūk nē	‘I’ ‘live’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’

	karūgi karūkna aruknu arūgi	naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kūrūgīt kūrūkta uruktu ūrūgīt	naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	
ōk	koogi oogi ōōk kōōk kōōkja ookju ōōk	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kōōga oogu ōōk koogito kōōkta ooktu oogito	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘untie’
uk	kadui adui aduk kaduk kadukca adukcu aduk	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kuduwa uduwu uduk kuduit kudukta uduktu uduit	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘eat’
ik	karii arii arik karik karikca arikcu arik	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kiriha iriwu irik kirihit kirikta iriktu irihit	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘flow’
ek	kerei erei erek kerek kerekca erekcu erek	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kereha erewu erek kereit kerekta erektu ereit	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘grind’
ok	kocoi ocoi ocok kocok kocokca ocokcu ocok	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kocowa ocowu ocok kocoit kocokta ocoktu ocoit	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘soak’
ak	kadai adai adak kadak kadakca adaku adak	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	kadaha adawu adak kadait kadakta adaktu adait	na niia nē naaga naaga niigia nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘bite’

kk	katduki	na	kutduka	na	'I'	'throw away'
	atduki	niiā	utduku	niiā	'you(sg)'	
	atduk	nē	utduk	nē	'(s)he'	
	katduk	naaga	kutdukit	naaga	'we (& you)'	
	katdukca	naaga	kutdukta	naaga	'we (not you)'	
	atdukeu	niigia	utduktu	niigia	'you(pl)'	
	atduk	nēēgē	utdukit	nēēgē	'they'	

In summary, the chart below lists the consonants in verbs with the subject **naaga**.

Subject marker suffixes **-Ca naaga** on incomplete and complete verbs

Incomplete			Complete		
j + C = jj	kamu<u>jj</u>a	j + C = ji	kumu<u>jj</u>a	'soften'	
d + C = dd	kaha<u>dd</u>a	d + C = di	kaha<u>dd</u>a	'hope'	
t + C = tt	kalu<u>tt</u>a	t + C = ti	kalu<u>tt</u>a	'accumulate'	
th + C = thth	kēgē<u>thth</u>a	th + C = thi	kege<u>thth</u>a	'gnaw'	
c + C = cc	ke<u>cc</u>a	c + C = ci	ke<u>cc</u>a	'answer'	
l + C = ll	ka<u>ll</u>a	l + C = li	ka<u>ll</u>a	'please'	
r + C = ry	kēngē<u>ry</u>a	r + C = ri	kengē<u>ry</u>a	'divide'	
w + C = yy	ka<u>yy</u>a	w + C = yi	ka<u>yy</u>a	'cast spell'	
ny + C = nyny	kōngōn<u>y</u>a	ny + C = nyc	kōngōn<u>y</u>a	'mix'	
b + C = bj	kēcē<u>b</u>a	b + C = pt	kēcē<u>pt</u>a	'tie'	
v + C = vy	kūū<u>v</u>a	v + C = vt	kūū<u>v</u>a	'point'	
m + C = mny	karū<u>m</u>a	m + C = mt	karū<u>m</u>a	'join'	
n + C = nn	ka<u>nn</u>a	n + C = nt	ka<u>nn</u>a	'see'	
ng + C = ngny	ka<u>ng</u>a	ng + C = ngt	ka<u>ng</u>a	'cover'	
ūk + C = kn	karū<u>k</u>a	ūk + C = kt	karū<u>k</u>a	'live'	
ōk + C = kj	kōō<u>k</u>a	ōk + C = kt	kōō<u>k</u>a	'untie'	
Vk + C = kc	ka<u>kc</u>a	Vk + C = kt	ka<u>kc</u>a	'eat'	

Exercise 22

In the following lines, underline all complete verbs and draw a circle around all incomplete verbs. In the blank _____ to the left, write which subject is marked. The answer could be **na**, **niiā**, **nē**, **naaga**, **niigia**, or **nēēgē**.

_____	Īnōnō thī cī yōkō acinnu niigia atieni eeta	'That is why you see men
_____	atik ngaai ramma wo.	marrying two wives.'
_____	Īcīnīt kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo wo nyaapō	'The animals with horns saw
_____		the hare.'
_____	"Kadimanī gimma cī ēēn vōlōng."	"I am doing something
_____		which is called a 'lie'."
_____	Īthōng ijinit gii cī athī vōlōng.	'And they asked for the thing
_____		which is called a lie.'

_____	Ngaatĩ athikni eeta ciko thõõth coo kêtê wo,	‘When the animals heard this message,’
_____	Kadimnya naaga ganõn kī Ikar,	‘We want peace with the
_____	kathinna ne,	Toposa, we say,’
_____	Ma katina kidima karaheha maam õgĩ cĩk	‘And then I take and put other
_____	aburi ijia.	hot water into the pot.’
_____	Kĩbaalĩc coo amut athĩĩnĩ.	‘There is a bird in the hands.’
_____	Ma ngĩ adimnyu,	‘And if you want,
_____	niigia arukcu uruit.	you can kill it to be dead.’
_____	Uwui, ebeli nyia?	‘Hey, what are you singing?’
_____	Mĩ kurubta kēlēgīt ĩmma cĩ kothii otoo,	‘If we find unhorned animal
_____	karuk woccia ni.	we will kill it.’

Verb Subject Markers with Final Vowels

Verbs with final vowel have slightly different subject markers.

Subject markers on verbs with final vowels

Incomplete			Completive			
Prefix	Suffix	Pronoun	Prefix	Suffix	Pronoun	
ka-		na	kV-	-wa	na	‘I’
a-		niia	V-	-wu	niia	‘You(sg)’
a-		nē	V-		nē	‘(S)he’
ka-		naaga	kV-	-co	naaga	‘we (& you)’
ka-	-ya	naaga	kV-	-ya	naaga	‘we (not you)’
a-	-yu	niigia	V-	-yu	niigia	‘You(pl)’
a-		nēēgē	V-	-co	nēēgē	‘They’

The subject markers are shown on three verbs with different final vowel.

Vowel	Incomplete		Completive		
i	kathii	na	kithiwa	na	‘I’
	athii	niia	ithiwu	niia	‘you(sg)’
	athii	nē	ithi	nē	‘(s)he’
	kathii	naaga	kithiico	naaga	‘we (& you)’
	kathiiya	naaga	kithiya	naaga	‘we (not you)’
	athiiyu	niigia	ithiyu	niigia	‘you(pl)’
	athii	nēēgē	ithiico	nēēgē	‘they’
a	kada	na	kadawa	na	‘I’
	ada	niia	adawu	niia	‘you(sg)’
	ada	nē	ada	nē	‘(s)he’

	kada	naaga	kadaaco	naaga	'we (& you)'	
	kadaya	naaga	kadaya	naaga	'we (not you)'	
	adayu	niigia	adayu	niigia	'you(pl)'	
	ada	nēēgē	adaaco	nēēgē	'they'	
ẽ	kētē	na	kētēwa	na	'I'	'skin'
	ētē	niia	etewu	niia	'you(sg)'	
	ētē	nē	ēt	nē	'(s)he'	
	kētē	naaga	kētēēco	naaga	'we (& you)'	
	kētēya	naaga	kētēya	naaga	'we (not you)'	
	eteyu	niigia	eteyu	niigia	'you(pl)'	
	ētē	nēēgē	ētēēco	nēēgē	'they'	

Exercise 23

In the following lines, underline all complete verbs and draw a circle around all incomplete verbs. In the blank _____ to the left, write which subject is marked. The answer could be **na**, **niia**, **nē**, **naaga**, **niigia**, or **nēēgē**.

_____	Ivitia eeta ciko iċinĩt nyaapō ithiico otoo.	Animals cam saw hare whose horns had disappeared.
_____	Ma balna ikiyia gōñña	Her friend came and found
_____	ĩthōng iyētha et cīnnĩ wo ithiwa.	her man had disappeared.
_____	Utuveco nēēgē nyaapō.	They called for the hare.

Verb Object Markers

In the lesson on pronouns, we learned that a verb changes with the object pronoun. For example, when we say **idima ngaa aneeta** 'The woman took me', the **-a** is attached to the verb because of the object **aneeta** 'me'. When we say, **idimung ngaa agiita** 'The woman took you(pl)', the **-ung** is attached to the verb because of the object **agiita** 'you(pl)'. These suffixes are called verb object markers.

All possible combinations of subject and object pronouns are shown below for the verb **bung** 'cover'. Subject markers are underlined, and object markers are in **bold**.

Subject	Incomplete		Complete			Object	
'I'	<u>kabung</u>	na	<u>kubunga</u>	na		'cover'	
	<u>kabung</u> ni	na	aniita	<u>kubungi</u>	na	aniita	'you(sg)'
	<u>kabung</u>	na	ĩnōñō	<u>kubunga</u>	na	ĩnōñō	'him/her'
	<u>kabung</u> nyung	na	agiita	<u>kabungung</u>	na	agiita	'you(pl)'
	<u>kabung</u>	na	ĩgōōgō	<u>kubunga</u>	na	ĩgōōgō	'them'
'you(sg)'	<u>abung</u>	niia		<u>ubungu</u>	niia		
	<u>abung</u> nya	niia	aneeta	<u>ubunga</u>	niia	aneeta	'me'

	<u>abungi</u>	niia	ĩnõõnõ	<u>ubungu</u>	niia	ĩnõõnõ	‘him/her’
	<u>abungnyet</u>	niia	agẽẽta	<u>ubunget</u>	niia	agẽẽta	‘us’
	<u>abungi</u>	niia	ĩgõõgõ	<u>ubungu</u>	niia	ĩgõõgõ	‘them’
‘(s)he’	<u>abung</u>	nẽ		<u>ubung</u>	nẽ		
	<u>abungnya</u>	nẽ	aneeta	<u>ubunga</u>	nẽ	aneeta	‘me’
	<u>abungnyi</u>	nẽ	aniita	<u>ubungi</u>	nẽ	aniita	‘you(sg)’
	<u>abung</u>	nẽ	ĩnõõnõ	<u>ubung</u>	nẽ	ĩnõõnõ	‘him/her’
	<u>abungnyet</u>	nẽ	agẽẽta	<u>ubunget</u>	nẽ	agẽẽta	‘us’
	<u>abungnyung</u>	nẽ	agiita	<u>ubungung</u>	nẽ	agiita	‘you(pl)’
	<u>abung</u>	nẽ	ĩgõõgõ	<u>ubung</u>	nẽ	ĩgõõgõ	‘them’
‘we(in)’	<u>kabung</u>	naaga		<u>kubungit</u>	naaga		
	<u>kabungnyi</u>	naaga	aniita	<u>kubungti</u>	naaga	aniita	‘you(sg)’
	<u>kabung</u>	naaga	ĩnõõnõ	<u>kubungit</u>	naaga	ĩnõõnõ	‘him/her’
	<u>kabungnyung</u>	naaga	agiita	<u>kubungtung</u>	naaga	agiita	‘you(pl)’
	<u>kabung</u>	naaga	ĩgõõgõ	<u>kubungit</u>	naaga	ĩgõõgõ	‘them’
‘we(ex)’	<u>kabungnya</u>	naaga		<u>kubungta</u>	naaga		
	<u>kabungnyi</u>	naaga	aniita	<u>kubungti</u>	naaga	aniita	‘you(sg)’
	<u>kabungnya</u>	naaga	ĩnõõnõ	<u>kubungta</u>	naaga	ĩnõõnõ	‘him/her’
	<u>kabungnyung</u>	naaga	agiita	<u>kubungtung</u>	naaga	agiita	‘you(pl)’
	<u>kabungnya</u>	naaga	ĩgõõgõ	<u>kubungta</u>	naaga	ĩgõõgõ	‘them’
‘you(pl)’	<u>abungnyu</u>	niigia		<u>ubungtu</u>	niigia		
	<u>abungnyangu</u>	niigia	aneeta	<u>ubungtangu</u>	niigia	aneeta	‘me’
	<u>abungnyu</u>	niigia	ĩnõõnõ	<u>ubungtu</u>	niigia	ĩnõõnõ	‘him/her’
	<u>abungnyetu</u>	niigia	agẽẽta	<u>ubungtetu</u>	niigia	agẽẽta	‘us’
	<u>abungnyu</u>	niigia	ĩgõõgõ	<u>ubungtu</u>	niigia	ĩgõõgõ	‘them’
‘they’	<u>abung</u>	nẽẽgẽ		<u>ubungit</u>	nẽẽgẽ		
	<u>abungnya</u>	nẽẽgẽ	aneeta	<u>ubungta</u>	nẽẽgẽ	aneeta	‘me’
	<u>abungnyi</u>	nẽẽgẽ	aniita	<u>ubungti</u>	nẽẽgẽ	aniita	‘you(sg)’
	<u>abung</u>	nẽẽgẽ	ĩnõõnõ	<u>ubungito</u>	nẽẽgẽ	ĩnõõnõ	‘him/her’
	<u>abungnyet</u>	nẽẽgẽ	agẽẽta	<u>ubungtet</u>	nẽẽgẽ	agẽẽta	‘us’
	<u>abungnyung</u>	nẽẽgẽ	agiita	<u>ubungtung</u>	nẽẽgẽ	agiita	‘you(pl)’
	<u>abung</u>	nẽẽgẽ	ĩgõõgõ	<u>ubungito</u>	nẽẽgẽ	ĩgõõgõ	‘them’

All possible combinations of subject and object pronouns are shown below for the verb **tũny** ‘wash’.

Subject	Incompleteive			Compleitive			Object
‘I’	<u>katunyi</u>	na		<u>kũtũnya</u>	na		‘wash’
	<u>katunynyi</u>	na	aniita	<u>kutunyi</u>	na	aniita	‘you(sg)’
	<u>katunyi</u>	na	ĩnõõnõ	<u>kũtũnya</u>	na	ĩnõõnõ	‘him/her’
	<u>katunynyung</u>	na	agiita	<u>kutunyang</u>	na	agiita	‘you(pl)’
	<u>katunyi</u>	na	ĩgõõgõ	<u>kũtũnya</u>	na	ĩgõõgõ	‘them’
‘you(sg)’	<u>unyu</u>	niia		<u>utunyu</u>	niia		
	<u>unynya</u>	niia	aneeta	<u>utunya</u>	niia	aneeta	‘me’
	<u>unyu</u>	niia	ĩnõõnõ	<u>utunyu</u>	niia	ĩnõõnõ	‘him/her’
	<u>unynyet</u>	niia	agẽẽta	<u>utunyet</u>	niia	agẽẽta	‘us’

'(s)he'	uny _i	nii	ãgððgð	utuny _u	nii	ãgððgð	'them'
	ũny	nẽ		ũtũny	nẽ		
	ũny _{ny} a	nẽ	aneeta	ũtũny _a	nẽ	aneeta	'me'
	uny _{ny} i	nẽ	aniita	utuny _i	nẽ	aniita	'you(sg)'
	ũny	nẽ	ĩnððnð	ũtũny	nẽ	ĩnððnð	'him/her'
	uny _{ny} et	nẽ	agẽẽta	utuny _{et}	nẽ	agẽẽta	'us'
	uny _{ny} ung	nẽ	agiita	utuny _{ung}	nẽ	agiita	'you(pl)'
	ũny	nẽ	ãgððgð	ũtũny	nẽ	ãgððgð	'them'
'we(in)'	kũny	naaga		kutuny _{ito}	naaga		
	kũny _{ny} i	naaga	aniita	kutuny _{ci}	naaga	aniita	'you(sg)'
	kũny	naaga	ĩnððnð	kutuny _{ito}	naaga	ĩnððnð	'him/her'
	kũny _{ny} ung	naaga	agiita	kutuny _{cung}	naaga	agiita	'you(pl)'
	kũny	naaga	ãgððgð	kutuny _{ito}	naaga	ãgððgð	'them'
'we(ex)'	kũny _{ny} a	naaga		kũtũny _{ca}	naaga		
	kũny _{ny} i	naaga	aniita	kutuny _{ci}	naaga	aniita	'you(sg)'
	kũny _{ny} a	naaga	ĩnððnð	kũtũny _{ca}	naaga	ĩnððnð	'him/her'
	kũny _{ny} ung	naaga	agiita	kutuny _{cung}	naaga	agiita	'you(pl)'
	kũny _{ny} a	naaga	ãgððgð	kũtũny _{ca}	naaga	ãgððgð	'them'
'you(pl)'	uny _{ny} u	niigia		utuny _{cu}	niigia		
	uny _{ny} angu	niigia	aneeta	utuny _{cangu}	niigia	aneeta	'me'
	uny _{ny} u	niigia	ĩnððnð	utuny _{cu}	niigia	ĩnððnð	'him/her'
	uny _{ny} etu	niigia	agẽẽta	utuny _{cet}	niigia	agẽẽta	'us'
	uny _{ny} u	niigia	ãgððgð	utuny _{cu}	niigia	ãgððgð	'them'
'they'	ũny	nẽẽgẽ		utuny _{ito}	nẽẽgẽ		
	ũny _{ny} a	nẽẽgẽ	aneeta	utuny _{ca}	nẽẽgẽ	aneeta	'me'
	uny _{ny} i	nẽẽgẽ	aniita	utuny _{ci}	nẽẽgẽ	aniita	'you(sg)'
	ũny	nẽẽgẽ	ĩnððnð	utuny _{ito}	nẽẽgẽ	ĩnððnð	'him/her'
	uny _{ny} et	nẽẽgẽ	agẽẽta	utuny _{cet}	nẽẽgẽ	agẽẽta	'us'
	uny _{ny} ung	nẽẽgẽ	agiita	utuny _{cung}	nẽẽgẽ	agiita	'you(pl)'
	ũny	nẽẽgẽ	ãgððgð	utuny _{ito}	nẽẽgẽ	ãgððgð	'them'

In summary, the six object markers are listed in the chart below. Object suffixes on incomplete verbs have a consonant C which depends on the last verb consonant. The C is the same as in suffixes –Ca, –Cu with **naaga** and **niigia** on *incomplete* verbs. With the object pronouns **nẽ** '(s)he' and **nẽẽgẽ** 'they', there are no markers on the verb.

Object marker suffixes on verbs							
Subject	Incomplete			Completive			Object
'I'	-Ci	na	aniita	-i	na	aniita	'you(sg)'
	-Cung	na	agiita	-ung	na	agiita	'you(pl)'
'you(sg)'	-Ca	nii	aneeta	-a	nii	aneeta	'me'
	-Cet	nii	agẽẽta	-et	nii	agẽẽta	'us'
'(s)he'	-Ca	nẽ	aneeta	-a	nẽ	aneeta	'me'
	-Ci	nẽ	aniita	-i	nẽ	aniita	'you(sg)'
	-Cet	nẽ	agẽẽta	-et	nẽ	agẽẽta	'us'
	-Cung	nẽ	agiita	-ung	nẽ	agiita	'you(pl)'

‘we(in)’	-Ci	naaga	aniita	-i	naaga	aniita	‘you(sg)’
	-Cung	naaga	agiita	-ung	naaga	agiita	‘you(pl)’
‘we(ex)’	-Ci	naaga	aniita	-i	naaga	aniita	‘you(sg)’
	-Cung	naaga	agiita	-ung	naaga	agiita	‘you(pl)’
‘you(pl)’	-Cangu	niigia	aneeta	-angu	niigia	aneeta	‘me’
	-Cetu	niigia	agēēta	-etu	niigia	agēēta	‘us’
‘they’	-Ca	nēēgē	aneeta	-a	nēēgē	aneeta	‘me’
	-Ci	nēēgē	aniita	-i	nēēgē	aniita	‘you(sg)’
	-Cet	nēēgē	agēēta	-et	nēēgē	agēēta	‘us’
	-Cung	nēēgē	agiita	-ung	nēēgē	agiita	‘you(pl)’

Exercise 24

In the following lines, draw a box around underlined completive verbs, and draw a circle around underlined incomplete verbs. In the blank to the left, write which object is marked (or left unmarked). The answer could be **aneeta**, **aniita**, **ĩnōōnō**, **agēēta**, **agiita**, or **ĩgōōgō**.

_____	Ma <u>kacinni</u> , <u>kaminanni</u> na aniita.	‘When I see (you), I love you.’
_____	Illalei kēnnē tuluuwu <u>ennei</u> ne,	‘The squirrel begs and says to him,’
_____	“Niia mĩ <u>ayahai</u> ngaa ahat	‘If the queen brings you food and unties the calf . . .’
_____	ĩthōng <u>ũwūrūtēk</u> mōōliēt, . . .”	
_____	“Oo <u>anycangu</u> bai aneeta.”	‘Please let me go.’
_____	Ĩthōng <u>kaduwasung</u> agiita et cĩk ēgĩnnu Laarimo,	‘We are telling you people of Laarim,’
_____	<u>Kennei</u> , “Athii cĩ kacudure, katali òrrōt.”	‘I said to them, “I am not angry, I am happy.”’
_____	Ma ngĩ ovo eeta jora <u>enneci</u> eeta aniita ne,	‘And if the people are going to fight, the people tell you,’
_____	Ivitia katĩ Ikari <u>eberyia</u> eeta gii cĩ <u>agiiragnet</u> agēēta timangĩ.	‘Then the Toposa came and the people took something for killing us (called) ‘timang’.’

Subjunctive Verbs (Irrealis)

Subjunctive verbs (irrealis) usually follow a verb and give a reason or purpose for the first verb. For example, the verb **kumuk** ‘in order to think’ has the prefix **ku-** and gives the purpose for the verb **aanyi** ‘allowed’. Subjunctive verbs often have the prefix **kV-**, where the letter **V** represents the first vowel of the verb.

- (1) Aanyii eeti et **kumuk** ‘The man is allowed to think.’

(2) Keevi na **kuduk**.

‘I cultivate in order to eat.’

The subjunctive forms of the verb below can take the place of sentence (2). These are compared with completive and incompletive verbs. Subjunctive verbs are a special kind of completive verb. So, subjunctive verbs are completive.

Subjunctive compared with incompletive and completive

Incompletive	Completive	Subjunctive	‘eat’
kadui na	kuduwa na	keevi na	kuduk ‘I’
adui niia	uduwu niia	eevi niia	duwu ‘You(sg)’
aduk nē	uduk nē	ēēv nē	kuduk ‘(S)he’
kaduk naaga	kuduit naaga	kēēv naaga	kuduit ‘we (& you)’
kadukca naaga	kudukta naaga	kēēvya naaga	kudukta ‘we (not you)’
adukeu niigia	uduktu niigia	eevyu niigia	uduit ‘You(pl)’
aduk nēēgē	uduit nēēgē	ēēv nēēgē	kuduit ‘They’

Subjunctive verbs used with **niia** ‘you (sg)’ and **niigia** ‘you (pl)’ are the same as command verbs (**Duk niia! Uduit niigia!**), except that subjunctive verbs with **niia** have a final **u** (**eevi niia duwu**). Commands are talked about in the next lesson.

Below, subjunctive verbs are shown with **nē** ‘(s)he’ and **nēēgē** ‘they’.

Subjunctive verbs with **nē** ‘(s)he’ and **nēēgē** ‘they’

aanyii nē kīcīn	aanyii nēēgē kīcīnīt	‘see’
aanyii nē kīthim	aanyii nēēgē kīthimit	‘abstain’
aanyii nē kūrūm	aanyii nēēgē kūrūmīt	‘join’
aanyii nē kuwum	aanyii nēēgē kuwumīt	‘touch’
aanyii nē kēcēb	aanyii nēēgē kēcēbīt	‘tie’
aanyii nē kedec	aanyii nēēgē kedecit	‘answer’
aanyii nē kōwōb	aanyii nēēgē kōwōbīt	‘follow’
aanyii nē kocok	aanyii nēēgē kocoit	‘soak’
aanyii nē kagam	aanyii nēēgē kagamīt	‘hold’
aanyii nē kumuk	aanyii nēēgē kumuit	‘think’
aanyii nē kubuuk	aanyii nēēgē kubuuīt	‘open’
aanyii nē kūdūng	aanyii nēēgē kūdūngīt	‘dose’
aanyii nē kivir	aanyii nēēgē kivirit	‘run’
aanyii nē kidil	aanyii nēēgē kidilit	‘put mud’
aanyii nē kijin	aanyii nēēgē kijinit	‘ask’
aanyii nē kilib	aanyii nēēgē kilibit	‘exit’
aanyii nē kībīl	aanyii nēēgē kībīlīt	‘stop s.m.’
aanyii nē keev	aanyii nēēgē keevito	‘cultivate’
aanyii nē kīthi	aanyii nēēgē kīthiico	‘die, loose’
aanyii nē kada	aanyii nēēgē kadaaco	‘bury’
aanyii nē kētē	aanyii nēēgē kētēeco	‘skin’
aanyii nē kerepan	aanyii nēēgē kerepanīt	‘search’
aanyii nē kuturran	aanyii nēēgē kuturranīt	‘wake up s.m.’

aanyii nē kūrūgūm	aanyii nēēgē kūrūgūmīt		‘dance’
aanyii nē kōvōlōng	aanyii nēēgē kōvōlōngīt		‘cheat’

Exercise 25

In the following sentences, underline verbs and draw a circle around all subjunctive verbs.

Ma thī mī odolan et ci a nē kēgēēnyī wo, kī kentek nē, “Kībaalīc coo amut athīīnei.”	And then when they reached wise person, they said, “There is a bird in the hands.”
---	---

“Mī adimnyu kadak agayyu niigia.”	“If you want it to die, you know how.”
-----------------------------------	--

Adiim dōōlīa ma ballīa kīī eeti ne, “Arūgī,” uruīt ballīa dōōlīa ciko kībaalīc, athī balna nēēgē ne, ma aduwa eeti coo thōōth coo, kī thī kutungit dōōlīa kībaalīc coo kūrūk.	Children wanted, if person said “Alive,” these children would kill the bird, it happened that they, when man said this word, then children allowed bird to live.
---	--

Formatted: English (U.S.)

Itik et coo ēcēbēk et coo karteenta īcītō, kī kuui ōlōō.	She took man, tied man to grass, and took him home.
---	--

“Bit avvu loota kī kitiryai kūthūūtha doolec.” “Remain with blackants to receive child.”

Command Verbs (Imperatives)

Command verbs are used to order or command others to do something. They are subjunctive verbs used with **niia** ‘you (sg)’ and **niigia** ‘you (pl)’. In (1), the singular command **dim** ‘take!’ is said to one person.

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| (1) “ Dim (niia) ahat!” | “ Take food! (said to one person)” |
| (2) “ Idimit (niigia) ahat!” | “ Take food! (said to more than one person)” |

In (2), the plural command **idimit** is said to more than one person. It has the prefix **i-** and the suffix **-it**.

Singular commands such as **dim** are the most basic form of the verb. In the dictionary, verbs are listed with this form. Command verbs are a special kind of subjunctive verb, which are a special kind of completive verb. So command verbs are completive.

The following command verbs can take the place of **dim** in (1) or **idimit** in (2). The most common plural commands have the prefix **V-** and the suffix **-īt** or **-c**. The letter **V** represents the first vowel of the verb. The suffix **-īt** follows consonants and the suffix **-c** follows vowels.

Singular	Plural
Command	Command

Dec!	Edecit!	‘Answer!’
Dil!	Idilit!	‘Put mud!’
Bil!	Ībilit!	‘Stop s.m.!’
Vir!	Ivirit!	‘Run!’
Cēb!	Ēcēbīt!	‘Tie!’
Wōb!	Ōwōbīt!	‘Follow!’
Lib!	Ilibit!	‘Exit!’
Eev!	Eevīt!	‘Cultivate!’
Gam!	Agamīt!	‘Hold!’
Thim!	Ithimit!	‘Abstain!’
Rūm!	Ūrūmīt!	‘Join!’
Wum!	Uwumit!	‘Touch!’
Cīn!	Īcīnīt!	‘See!’
Jin!	Ijinīt!	‘Ask!’
Dūng!	Ūdūngīt!	‘Dose!’
Cok!	Ocoit!	‘Soak!’
Muk!	Umuwīt!	‘Think!’
Buuk!	Ubuuwīt!	‘Open!’
Thii!	Ithiic!	‘Die, Loose!’
Daa!	Adaac!	‘Bury!’
Tēē!	Ētēēc!	‘Skin!’
Repan!	Erepanīt!	‘Search!’
Turran!	Uturranīt!	‘Wake up s.m.!’
Rūgūm!	Ūrūgūmīt!	‘Dance!’
Vōlōng!	Ōvōlōngīt!	‘Cheat!’

Exercise 26

In the following sentences, underline verbs, draw a circle around singular commands, and draw a box around plural commands.

“Ēcēbīt tīn uguucak.”	“Tie your cows.”
“Bit avvu loota kī kitiryai kūthūūtha doolec.”	“Go, remain down for the black ants to produce a child.”
“Dima kongok īthōng ariha aneeta īcītō.”	“Get baby pouch and put me inside.”
“Koot thīna gaama aneeta thūgūūm ngītī lēngēri wo, gaam jurung nga.”	“We go, hold onto me on place of small buttock, hold properly!”
“Lūcīa loota mī thong athii cī ēēni kēlēgīt, ija thī loota ngato.”	“Come down if you not an animal, then come down here.”
“Yei niigia nyī nga ukonu, yōkō niigia avuut niigia vėlēk iito ngai cīganīk. Aneeta coo,	“You, please do not fight! Now you, you all remain you be as my wives. I am here,

nyĩ nga ukonu nabo.”

do not fight any more.”

“Uuk kidong cĩ dīci, *tĩl tĩl tĩl.*”

“Beat the drum that is small, *tum.*”

Verbal Nouns

Verbal nouns are verbs that are used as nouns. The noun **muwenti** ‘thinking’ comes from the command singular verb **muk** ‘think!’ by adding the suffix **-enti**.

Abunna **muwenti**. ‘Thinking is good.’

The following action verbal nouns can take the place of **muwenti** in the above sentence. Verbal nouns may have the suffixes **-enti**, **-inti**, depending on the verb vowel. Verbs with the vowels **i,ĩ,u,ũ** take the suffix **-enti** and verbs with the vowels **e,ẽ,o,õ,a** take the suffix **-inti**. A few verbal nouns have **-anti**, **-ithi**, **-eneti**, **-wenti**, **-winti** or other suffixes.

Singular Command	Action Verbal Noun	Actor Verbal Noun		Suffix and root vowel		
Cĩn!	cĩnenti	ciniok	ciniak	-en(e)ti with {i,ĩ,u,ũ}	‘see’	
Thim!	thimenti	thimyok	thimyak		‘abstain’	
Rũm!	rũmenti	rumyok	rumyak		‘join’	
Wum!	wumenti	wumyok	wumyak		‘touch’	
Muk!	muwenti				‘think’	
Buuk!	buuwenti				‘open’	
Dil!	dilenti				‘put mud’	
Jin!	jinenti				‘ask’	
Lib!	libenti				‘exit’	
Thii!	thiwenti	thiyok	thiyak		‘die, loose’	
Cěb!	cěbinti	cebjok	cebjak		-in(e)ti with {e,ẽ,o,õ,a}	‘tie’
Dec!	decinti	decjok	deciak			‘answer’
Wõb!	wõbinti	wobjok	wobjak			‘follow’
Cok!	cowinti	cokcok	cokcak			‘soak’
Gam!	gaminti	gamyok	gamyak	‘hold’		
Eev!	eevinti			‘cultivate’		
Daa!	dawinti	dayok	dayak	‘bury’		
Těě!	těwinti	teyok	teyak	‘skin’		
Repan!	repaninti			‘search’		
Turran!	turraninti			‘wake up s.m.’		
Dũng!	dũngithi			‘dose’		
Vir!	virenti, vireta			‘run’		
Bĩl!	bĩlněta			‘stop s.m.’		
Rũgũm!	rũgũmõni			‘dance’		
Võlõng!	võlõnga		volongnyiak	‘cheat’		

Some verbs can also become actor verbal nouns such as **goryiaha** ‘thiefs’ and **volongnyiak** ‘spies’ in the sentence below. As shown in the list above, some verbs can add the suffix **-iok** or **-iak** to show they are nouns that do the action.

Een **goryiaha volongnyiak**. ‘The theives are spies.’

Exercise 27

In the following sentences, underline verbs, and draw a circle around verbal nouns.

Ovo kabbĩrĩna da tamuatidiina a ne, Wasps were going to sky, saying that
ovo adiman tienit cĩning cĩ tiento. they would have their wedding feast.

Ngaatĩ athikni kabbĩrĩna belinit coo wo, When wasps heard this singing,

Ĩthõng ma ngĩ ãdãcĩa eevinti, kivitia thĩ koot ‘And when they finish the cultivation,
õlõõ. then we come and go home.’

Ayak balna kãlãgã cik ayak otoo tienit, Animals with horns were having wedding,
ĩthõng balna ayak rumenit cĩning. and they were having companionship.

Derived verbs

Derived verbs come from common verbs by adding pairs of suffixes. A derived verb usually has similar meaning to the common verb it is derived from. Below, command forms of derived and common forms are shown. The suffix before the slash / is for the singular derived command. The suffix after the slash is for the plural derived command. The last two verbs are derived from nouns instead of from verbs.

	Common form			Derived form		
	Command singular	Command plural		Command singular	Command plural	
-a/-Ca	tur	uturĩt	‘pound’	turã	uturyã	‘beat grain’
-oi/-Coi	tũwũ	ũtũwẽc	‘turn over’	tuwoi	utuyyoi	‘sell’
-Coi/-Coi	uuk	uukit	‘hit, beat’	uktoi	uktoi	‘fight’
-ai/-Cai	tir	itirĩt	‘give birth’	tirãi	itiryãi	‘be born’
-e/-Ce	cĩn	ĩcĩnĩt	‘see’	cĩnẽ	ĩcĩnte	‘be alert’
-ek/-Cek	nyũm	ũnyũmĩt	‘fold’	nyumek	unyumtek	‘wrap up’
-ik/-Cik	aany	aanyĩt	‘winnow’	aanyik	aanycik	‘be offered’
-an/-an	kẽõt	kẽõtnya	‘thread(n)’	kẽõtãũ	ẽkẽõtãĩt	‘sew (clothe)’
tV-/tV-	lanyĩt	lanyĩtua	‘light(n)’	talanyũ	atalanyĩt	‘shine’

In the dictionary, derived verbs are listed in command form with one of the following pairs of suffixes. The first two pairs **-(ũ)/-ĩt**, **-/-c** are for common verb forms which the others are derived from. The letter C represents a consonant or vowel **i** like that in suffixes **-Ca** for **naaga** on completive verbs (see page 75).

Derivational suffixes in command forms

		Command singular	Command plural	
	-(ũ)/-ĩt	Cĩn(ũ)!	Īcĩnĩt!	‘See!’
	-/-c	Thii!	Ithiie!	‘Die, Loose!’
Direction	-a/-Ca	Duwa!	Uduka!	‘Decide!’
Reciprocal	-oi/-Coi	Liwoi!	Iliktoi!	‘Surround!’
	-Coi/-Coi, -oi/-oi	Uktoi!	Uktoi!	‘Fight!’
Instrument	-ai/-Cai	Lemai!	Elemtai!	‘Permit!’
Passive (reflexive)	-e/-Ce	Cebe!	Ecebite!	‘Be tied!’
Benefit	-ek/-Cek	Cebek!	Ecebtek!	‘Tie, Fasten!’
	-ik/-Cik	Demik!	Edemtik!	‘Correct!’
Causative	-an/-an	Ticanu!	Iticanit!	‘Serve!’
	tV/-tV-	Tĕkĕthũ!	Ētĕkĕthĩt!	‘Scrape!’

Below, subject markers are attached to each type of derived verb. The command forms are included with each.

Direction

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Duwa!	Uduka!
-a/-Ca	kaduwa na	kaduwa na	‘I’	‘decide’
	aduwa niia	uduwa niia	‘you(sg)’	
	aduwa nĕ	uduwa nĕ	‘(s)he’	
	kaduwa naaga	kudukta naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kaduwana naaga	kuduktaha naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	aduwanu niigia	uduktawu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	aduwa nĕĕgĕ	udukta nĕĕgĕ	‘they’	

Reciprocal

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Tiwoi!	Itiktoi!
-oi/-Coi	kitiwoi na	kitiwoi na	‘I’	‘marry’
	itiwoi niia	itiwoi niia	‘you(sg)’	
	itiwoi nĕ	itiwoi nĕ	‘(s)he’	
	katiwoi naaga	kitiktoi naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	katiwona naaga	kitiktowa naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	atiwону niigia	itiktowu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	atiwoi nĕĕgĕ	itiktoi nĕĕgĕ	‘they’	

Instrument

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Lemai!	Elemtai!
-ai/-Cai	kelemai na	kelemai na	‘I’	‘permit’
	elemai niia	elemai niia	‘you(sg)’	
	elemai nĕ	elemai nĕ	‘(s)he’	
	kelemani naaga	kelemtai naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kelemania naaga	kelemtahia naaga	‘we (not you)’	

	ele <u>manu</u> niigia	elem <u>tawu</u> niigia	'you(pl)'
	elem <u>mai</u> nēēgē	elem <u>tai</u> nēēgē	'they'

Passive (reflexive)

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Cebe!	Ece <u>bte</u> !
-e/-Ce	ke <u>cebe</u> na	k <u>ēcēbē</u> na	'I'	'be tied
	e <u>cebe</u> niia	ē <u>cebē</u> niia	'you(sg)'	(punish)'
	e <u>cebe</u> nē	ē <u>cebē</u> nē	'(s)he'	
	ke <u>ceb</u> naaga	k <u>ēcēbtē</u> naaga	'we (& you)'	
	k <u>ēcēbina</u> naaga	k <u>ēcēbtēha</u> naaga	'we (not you)'	
	e <u>cebinu</u> niigia	e <u>cebtewu</u> niigia	'you(pl)'	
	e <u>ceb</u> nēēgē	ē <u>cebte</u> nēēgē	'they'	

Benefit

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Ceb <u>ek</u> !	Ece <u>btek</u> !
-ek/-Cek	ke <u>cebej</u> na	k <u>ēcēbēha</u> na	'I'	'tie, fasten'
	e <u>cebej</u> niia	e <u>cebewu</u> niia	'you(sg)'	
	e <u>cebej</u> nē	ē <u>cebēk</u> nē	'(s)he'	
	ke <u>cebej</u> naaga	k <u>ēcēbtēk</u> naaga	'we (& you)'	
	k <u>ēcēbēca</u> naaga	k <u>ēcēbtēha</u> naaga	'we (not you)'	
	e <u>cebe<u>cu</u></u> niigia	e <u>cebtewu</u> niigia	'you(pl)'	
	e <u>cebej</u> nēēgē	ē <u>cebte<u>k</u></u> nēēgē	'they'	

Benefit

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Dem <u>ik</u> !	Edem <u>tik</u> !
-ik/-Cik	ke <u>demji</u> na	ke <u>demija</u> na	'I'	'correct'
	e <u>demji</u> niia	e <u>demiwu</u> niia	'you(sg)'	
	e <u>demji</u> nē	e <u>demik</u> nē	'(s)he'	
	ke <u>demji</u> naaga	ke <u>demtik</u> naaga	'we (& you)'	
	ke <u>demjca</u> naaga	ke <u>demtiha</u> naaga	'we (not you)'	
	e <u>demjcu</u> niigia	e <u>demtiwu</u> niigia	'you(pl)'	
	e <u>demji</u> nēēgē	e <u>demtik</u> nēēgē	'they'	

Causative ?

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Dum <u>anu</u> !	Udum <u>anīt</u> !
-an/-an- -ũ/-īt	ka <u>dumani</u> na	ku <u>dumana</u> na	'I'	'hire'
	a <u>dumani</u> niia	u <u>dumanu</u> niia	'you(sg)'	
	a <u>duman</u> nē	u <u>duman</u> nē	'(s)he'	
	ka <u>duman</u> naaga	ku <u>dumanit</u> naaga	'we (& you)'	
	ka <u>dumanna</u> naaga	ku <u>dumanta</u> naaga	'we (not you)'	
	a <u>duman<u>nu</u></u> niigia	u <u>dumantu</u> niigia	'you(pl)'	
	a <u>duman</u> nēēgē	u <u>dumanit</u> nēēgē	'they'	

Causative

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Tu <u>buru</u> !	Ut <u>uburit</u> !
tV-/tV-	ka <u>buri</u> na	ku <u>tubura</u> na	'I'	'deny'

-ũ/-ĩt	aburi	niia	utuburu	niia	‘you(sg)’
	aburi	ně	utubur	ně	‘(s)he’
	kaburi	naaga	kutuburit	naaga	‘we (& you)’
	kaburna	naaga	kutuburyia	naaga	‘we (not you)’
	aburnu	niigia	utuburyu	niigia	‘you(pl)’
	aburi	něěgě	utuburit	něěgě	‘they’

Each derived verb is talked about more in the following lessons.

Exercise 28

In the following sentences, underline verbs, draw a circle around singular commands, and draw a box around plural commands.

“Yei lōgōth oyokonta da nō nīcē
kurumtoi kōrōōk ĩcī gōōla.”

“You people, go from the other side
and we will meet at my house.”

“Anycīk kidimta kanyīha, thī nēnně viyo
na ĩgōōgō vėlēk.”

“Let them bring what I gave them
already.”

“Ivitia baai thī ngato ivitia adaakte.”

“Then please come here, come to be
eaten.”

“Vōlōng coo coo irot ooti.”

“This lie, this take and go with.”

“Ayakta da ngato kebeloi
kithihit da naaga dūwwūk.”

“Please bring him here to sing
so that all of us can hear.”

Direction Verbs

Direction verbs show the action is towards something. In (1) **ebel** ‘sings’ is the common action without direction. In (2), the suffix **-a** on the same verb shows the direction of **ebel** is towards **tōmōt cīnnī** ‘his bull’.

(1) Ebel tuluuwu.

The squirrel sings.

(2) Ebela tuluuwu tōmōt cīnnī.

The squirrel sings to his bull.

Subject markers are attached to the direction verb **duwa/udukta** ‘decide’ below.

Direction

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Duwa!	Udukta!
-a/-Ca	kaduwa na	kuduwa na	‘I’	‘decide’
	aduwa niia	uduwa niia	‘you(sg)’	
	aduwa nē	uduwa nē	‘(s)he’	
	kaduwa naaga	kudukta naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kaduwana naaga	kuduktaha naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	aduwanu niigia	uduktawu niigia	‘you(pl)’	

| aduwa nêĕgê | udukta nêĕgê | ‘they’

The commands of other direction verbs are shown below. The suffix of singular commands is **-a** and the suffix of plural commands is **-Ca**. The letter **C** represents a consonant or vowel **i** like that in suffix **-Ca** for **naaga** on completive verbs (see page 75).

Direction commands -a/-Ca

Singular Command		Singular Direction Command	Plural Direction Command	
Dil!	‘put mud’	Dila!	Idilia!	‘put mud coming’
Bil!	‘stop s.m.’	Bila!	Ībilia!	‘stop s.m. coming’
Vir!	‘run’	Vira!	Ivirya!	‘run coming’
Cēb!	‘tie’	Cēba!	Ēcēbta!	‘tie coming, bind together’
Wōb!	‘follow’	Wōba!	Ōwōpta!	‘follow coming’
Lib!	‘exit’	Liba!	Ilipta!	‘exit coming’
Eev!	‘cultivate’	Eeva!	Eevīt!	‘cultivate coming’
Gam!	‘hold’	Gama!	Agamta!	‘hold coming’
Rūm!	‘join’	Rūma!	Ūrūmta!	‘join coming, combine’
Wum!	‘touch’	Wuma!	Uwumta!	‘touch coming’
Cīn!	‘see’	Cīna!	Īcīnta!	‘see coming, select’
Jin!	‘ask’	Jina!	Ijinta!	‘ask coming’
Cok!	‘soak’	Cowa!	Ocokta!	‘soak coming’
Muk!	‘think’	Muwa!	Umukta!	‘think coming, remember’
Buuk!	‘open’	Buuwa!	Ubuukta!	‘open coming’
Thii!	‘die, loose’	Thiiwa!	Ithiic!	‘die, loose coming, disappear’
Daa!	‘bury’	Daawa!	Adaac!	‘bury coming’
Tēē!	‘skin’	Tēēwa!	Ētēēc!	‘skin coming’
Rūgūm!	‘dance’	Rūgūma!	Ūrūgūmīt!	‘dance coming’
Vōlōng!	‘cheat, lie’	Vōlōnga!	Ōvōlōngīt!	‘cheat, lie coming’

Exercise 29

In the following lines, underline all direction verbs. Draw a **box** around all completive verbs and draw **a circle** around all incompletive verbs.

Ma balna nyaapō avu gōō ãthōng udunga. Then the hare was there and dosed.

Eberya eeta kēlēgē cīk ēēn tur oo. The people chose five animals.

Ma thīna oyokona nyaapō ãthōng ivir. Then the hare came around and ran.

Ngaatī abui, iliba nyaapō a noko ne, Puul! ivira ubukanek eet ciko tukan kēbērē kongolingce.	When they opened, hare came out saying <i>Pow!</i> he powdered the animals in the eyes with flour.
---	---

Adima nē nyaapō ēlē cīnnī kī vōlōng thēk kiir nē,	The hare took himself to be the lie, the great lie.
Edecia iyainiti coo ngato.	This story is now finished.
Atdukai gōō īnōōnō munnī cīk abiri ēbēra thīgō ngaa coo.	He threw her some ripe fruit and this woman took it.
Avu eeti kēēta tidiina īthōng ulucia loota.	The person in the tree came down.
Ma balna ikiyia gōōnīa īthōng iyetha et cīnnī wo ithiwa.	Then her friend came and found that her man was missing.

Reciprocal Verbs

Reciprocal verbs show the action is done together with others, in front of others, or by one person over time. In (1) **ebel** ‘sings’ is the common action without a reciprocal meaning. In (2), the suffix **-oi** on the verb shows **ebel** is in front of others.

- (1) Ebel gii coo nyia? What is this thing singing?
(2) Ebeloi gii coo nyia? What is this thing singing in front of us?

Subject markers are attached to the reciprocal verb **tiwoi/itiktoi** ‘marry’ below.

Reciprocal

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Tiwoi!	Itiktoi!
-oi/-Coi	kitiwoi na	kitiwoi na	‘I’	‘marry’
	itiwoi niia	itiwoi niia	‘you(sg)’	
	itiwoi nē	itiwoi nē	‘(s)he’	
	katiwoi naaga	kitiktoi naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	katiwona naaga	kitiktowa naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	atiwōnu niigia	itikto<u>wu</u> niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	atiwoi nēēgē	itiktoi nēēgē	‘they’	

The commands of other reciprocal verbs are shown below. The suffix of singular commands is **-oi** and the suffix of plural commands is **-Coi**. Singular reciprocal verbs often show the action happens over time.

Singular Command		Singular Reciprocal Command	Plural Reciprocal Command	
Dec!	‘answer’	Decoi!	Edecioi!	‘answer over time/together’
Dil!	‘put mud’	Diloi!	Idilioi!	‘put mud over time/together’
Vir!	‘run’	---	Ivirioi!	‘run over time/together’
Cēb!	‘tie’	Cēboi!	Ēcēbtoi!	‘tie over time/together’

Wōb!	‘follow’	Wōboi!	Ōwōbtoi!	‘follow over time/together’
Lib!	‘exit’	Liboi!	Ilibtoi!	‘exit over time/together’
Eev!	‘cultivate’	Eevoi!	Eevtoi!	‘cultivate over time/together’
Gam!	‘hold’	Gamoi!	Agamtoi!	‘hold over time/together, carry’
Thim!	‘prevent’	Thimoi!	Ithimtoi!	‘prevent over time/together’
Rūm!	‘join’	Rūmoi!	Ūrūmtoi!	‘join over time/together’
Wum!	‘touch’	Wumoi!	Uwumtoi!	‘touch over time/together’
Cīn!	‘see’	Cīnoi!	Īcīntoi!	‘see over time/together’
Jin!	‘ask’	Jinoi!	Ijintoi!	‘ask over time/together’
Cok!	‘soak’	Cowoi!	Ocoktoi!	‘soak over time/together’
Muk!	‘think’	Muwoi!	Umuktoi!	‘think over time/together’
Buuk!	‘open’	Buuwoi!	Ubuuktoi!	‘open over time/together’
Daa!	‘bury’	Daayoi!	Adaayioi!	‘bury over time/together’
Tēē!	‘skin’	Tēēyoi!	Ētēēyioi!	‘skin over time/together’
Rūgūm!	‘dance’	---	Ūrūgūmtoi!	‘dance over time/together’
Vōlōng!	‘cheat, lie’	Vōlōngoi!	Ōvōlōngtoi!	‘cheat, lie over time/together’

Exercise 30

In the following lines, underline all reciprocal verbs. Draw a box around all complete verbs and draw a circle around all incomplete verbs.

“Yei lōgōth oyokonta da nō nīcē
kurumtoi kōrōōk ici gōōla.”

“You people, go from the other side
we will meet a my home.”

“Ayakta da ngato kēbēloi
kithihit da naaga dūwūk.”
Ayakta thī eeta īnōōnō entek ne, “Bēloi!”

“Bring him here to sing
so that all of us can hear.”
Then people brought him, said “Sing!”

Avu thī ngaa coo īthōng utukuroi.

There was this queen and she cooked.

Oot thī avuto ōlōō
ma balna natē ūrūmtē
īthōng anyawoi nē . . .

They went and stayed at home
and were united there
and she became pregnant . . .

Ma balna avuto
īthōng uktoi thōōth cī et coo wo.

They were there
and argued about this problem.

Avuto thī īnīnga ukoi
urumte nēēgē itiktoi kī et coo.

They stayed together without fighting
and were married to this man.

Instrument Verbs

Instrument verbs show the action is done with something, such as a certain tool. It can show importance to the object. In (1) **atduk** ‘throws’ is the common action without showing importance to the object. In (2), the suffix **-ai** on the same verb shows the

importance of the object **munni cĭk abiri** ‘fruit that is ripe’.

- (1) **Atduk** gii. He throws something.
 (2) **Atdukai** gōḏ ñḏōñḏ munni cĭk abiri. He throws her some ripe fruit.

Subject markers are attached to the direction verb **lemai/elemtai** ‘decide’ below.

Instrument

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Lemai!	Elemtai!
-ai/-Cai	kelemai na elemai niia elemai nē keleman i naaga kelemania naaga elemanu niigia elemani nēēgē	kelemai na elemai niia elemai nē kelemtai naaga kelemtahia naaga elemtawu niigia elemtai nēēgē	‘I’ ‘you(sg)’ ‘(s)he’ ‘we (& you)’ ‘we (not you)’ ‘you(pl)’ ‘they’	‘permit’

The commands of other instrument verbs are shown below. The suffix of singular commands is **-ai** and the suffix of plural commands is **-Cai**.

Singular Command		Singular Instrument Command	Plural Instrument Command	
Dec!	‘answer’	Decai!	Edeciai!	‘answer with’
Dil!	‘put mud’	Dilai!	Idilial!	‘put mud with’
Bil!	‘stop s.m.’	Bilal!	Ībilial!	‘stop s.m. with’
Vir!	‘run’	Virai!	Iviryal!	‘run with, run fast’
Cēb!	‘tie’	Cēbai!	Ēcēbtai!	‘tie with’
Wōb!	‘follow’	Wōbai!	Ōwōbtai!	‘follow with, follow soon’
Lib!	‘exit’	Libai!	Ilibtai!	‘exit with’
Eev!	‘cultivate’	Eevai!	Eevtai!	‘cultivate with’
Gam!	‘hold’	Gamai!	Agamtai!	‘hold with, took already’
Thim!	‘prevent’	---	Ithimtai!	‘prevent with, abstain’
Rūm!	‘join’	---	Ūrūmtai!	‘join with’
Wum!	‘touch’	Wumai!	Uwumtai!	‘touch with’
Cīn!	‘see’	Cīnai!	Īcīntai!	‘see with, observe’
Dūng!	‘dose’	Dūngai!	Ūdūngtai!	‘dose with’
Muk!	‘think’	Muwai!	Umuktai!	‘think with’
Buuk!	‘open’	Buuwai!	Ubuuktai!	‘open with’
Thii!	‘die, loose’	---	Ithiiyioi!	‘die, loose with, disappear’
Daa!	‘bury’	Daayai!	Adaayiai!	‘bury with, dig out’
Tēē!	‘skin’	Tēēyai!	Ētēēyiai!	‘skin with’
Rūgūm!	‘dance’	Rūgūmai!	Ūrūgūmtai!	‘dance with’
Vōlōng!	‘cheat, lie’	Vōlōngai!	Ōvōlōngtai!	‘cheat, lie with, bring a spy’

Exercise 31

In the following lines, underline all instrument verbs. Draw abx around all completive verbs and draw a circle around all incompletive verbs.

Ma mī eted eeti looron wo, And when wasp cut rope,
utdukwai tuluuwu uruk looc noko būth. squirrel fell, slammed into ground.

Ma thī balna eeti coo mī acīn ngaa coo wo, And then when man saw woman,
atdukai gōō ññōñō munni cīk abiri. he threw her some ripe fruit.

“Bit avvu loota “Go, remain down
kī kitiryai kūthūūtha doolec.” for black ants to produce a child.”

Passive (Reflexive) Verbs

Passive (reflexive) verbs show that the subject noun (in nominative case) is the receiver of the action. This noun can be the doer and receiver of the action, or just the receiver of the action.

In (1), the doer of the action verb **uruk** ‘kill’ is **kēlēgīti** ‘animal’. The noun **kēlēgīti** has the suffix **-i** to show that it is the *doer*. The noun **et** ‘man’, without the suffix **-i**, is the *receiver* of the action. In (2), the doer of the verb **uruk** is **eeti**. The noun **eeti** has the suffix **-i** to show that it is the *doer*. The noun **kēlēgīt**, without the suffix **-i**, is the *receiver* of the action.

- (1) Uruk balna kēlēgīti **et**. ‘The *animal* killed the man.’
(2) Uruk balna **eeti** kēlēgīt. ‘The *man* killed the animal.’
(3) Uruwe balna kēlēgīti. ‘The *animal* was killed.’

In (3), the noun **kēlēgīti** has the suffix **-i**. Usually the suffix **-i** means that a noun is the doer of the action. However, the passive verb **uruwe** ‘was killed’ has the suffix **-e** to show that **kēlēgīti** is the *receiver* of the action instead of the *doer*.

In (4), **bōwōli** ‘tortoise’ is both the doer and the receiver of the passive (reflexive) verb **ūrūmtē** ‘gathered’. He does the action **ūrūmtē** to himself.

- (4) Ikiyia balna *bōwōli* buu ūrūmtē kī ‘Tortoise came and also gathered with
kēlēgē. animals.’

The passive (reflexive) verb **ūrūmtē** has the suffix **-e** to show that **bōwōli** is the *receiver* of the action in addition to being the *doer*.

Verb subject markers are attached to the passive verb **cebe/ecebte** ‘be tied’ below.

Passive (reflexive)

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Ce <u>b</u> e!	Ece <u>b</u> te!
----------	--------------	------------	----------------	------------------

-e/-Ce	kecebe	na	kēcēbē	na	'I'	'be tied
	ecebe	nii	ēcēbē	nii	'you(sg)'	(punish)'
	ecebe	nē	ēcēbē	nē	'(s)he'	
	keceb	naaga	kēcēbtē	naaga	'we (& you)'	
	kēcēbina	naaga	kēcēbtēha	naaga	'we (not you)'	
	ecebinu	niigia	ecebtēwu	niigia	'you(pl)'	
	eceb	nēēgē	ēcēbtē	nēēgē	'they'	

The commands of other passive verbs are shown below. The suffix of singular commands is **-e** and the suffix of plural commands is **-Ce**.

Singular Command		Singular Passive Command	Plural Passive Command	
Dec!	'answer'	Dece!	Edecei!	'be caught (flying object)'
Dil!	'put mud'	Dile!	Idilie!	'put mudded'
Vir!	'run'	---	Ivirei!	'be run (by s.m.)'
Cēb!	'tie'	Cēbe!	Ēcēbte!	'be tied'
Wōb!	'follow'	Wōbe!	Ōwōbte!	'be followed'
Lib!	'exit'	Libe!	Ilibte!	'be broken'
Eev!	'cultivate'	Eeve!	Eevte!	'be cultivated'
Gam!	'hold'	Game!	Agamte!	'be caught'
Thim!	'prevent'	Thime!	Ithimte!	'be prevented'
Rūm!	'join'	Rūme!	Ūrūmte!	'be united'
Wum!	'touch'	Wume!	Uwumte!	'be touched'
Cīn!	'see'	Cīne!	Īcīnte!	'wake up self'
Jin!	'ask'	Jine!	Ijinte!	'be asked'
Cok!	'soak'	Cowe!	Ocokte!	'be soaked (by self)'
Buuk!	'open'	Buuwe!	Ubuukte!	'be open (to following rules)'
Daa!	'bury'	---	Adaayie!	'be buried'
Tēē!	'skin'	---	Ētēēyie!	'be skinned'
Rūgūm!	'dance'	---	Ūrūgūmte!	'be dancing (by possession)'

Exercise 32

In the following lines, underline all passive verbs. Draw a **box** around all completive verbs and draw **a circle** around all incompletive verbs.

Īthōng ōbōwē dōllīani coo, nyatarka alangan 'And wax was melted because
kōra. the sun melted it.'

"Ivitia baai thī ngato ivitia adaakte." "Then come here, come be eaten."

Ma thī mī anyakcie gonia wo, 'Then when friend was pregnant,

Ma thī thēk balna natē uwuddie kēlēgē. Then the animals got drunk.

“Athii cī kagawua tīina, tīina niekie angide
ee angid ngēnē?”

“We do not know cows, these cows
that were raided, who raided?”

Ma ngī ūrūjane laata, kidimta thī nōnō
cī dīcī katarita.

‘When beer flour is prepared, then
I first take small amount and test.’

Benefit (Applicative)

Benefit verbs show the action is done for someone or to something. In (1) **ēcēb** ‘tied’ is the common action without being done to anything. In (2), the suffix **-ek** on the verb shows the action is done to **karteenta īcītō** ‘inside the grass’.

(1) **Ēcēb** ngaa et coo.

Woman tied this man.

(2) **Ēcēbēk** ngaa et coo karteenta īcītō.

Woman tied this man to grass.

Subject markers are attached to the benefit verb **cēbēk/ēcēbtēk** ‘tie, fasten’ below.

Benefit

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Cēbēk!	Ēcēbtēk!
-ek/-Cek	kecebej na	kēcēbēha na	‘I’	‘tie, fasten’
	ecebej niia	ecēbewu niia	‘you(sg)’	
	ecebej nē	ēcēbēk nē	‘(s)he’	
	kecebej naaga	kēcēbtēk naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kēcēbēca naaga	kēcēbtēha naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	ecebecu niigia	ecēbtewu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	ecebej nēēgē	ēcēbtēk nēēgē	‘they’	

Some benefit verbs can have the suffixes **-ik/-Cik**. Subject markers are attached to the benefit verb **demik/edemtik** ‘correct’ below.

Benefit

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	Demik!	Edemtik!
-ik/-Cik	kedemij na	kedemiha na	‘I’	‘correct’
	edemij niia	edemiwu niia	‘you(sg)’	
	edemij nē	edemik nē	‘(s)he’	
	kedemij naaga	kedemtik naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kedemica naaga	kedemtiha naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	edemicu niigia	edemtiwu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	edemij nēēgē	edemtik nēēgē	‘they’	

The commands of other benefit verbs are shown below. The suffix of singular commands is **-ek** or **-ik** and the suffix of plural commands is **-Cek** or **-Cik**.

Singular Command	Singular Benefit	Plural Benefit
-----------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------

		Command	Command	
Dil!	‘put mud’	Dilek!	Idilie!	‘put mud for’
Bil!	‘stop s.m.’	Bilek!	Ibiliek!	‘stop s.m. for’
Vir!	‘run’	Virek!	Iviryek!	‘run for’
Cēb!	‘tie’	Cebek!	Ecebtek!	‘tie for’
Wōb!	‘follow’	Wobek!	Owoptek!	‘follow for’
Eev!	‘cultivate’	Eevēk!, Eevik!	Eevtek!, Eevtik!	‘cultivate for’
Gam!	‘hold’	Gamek!	Agamtek!	‘hold for’
Thim!	‘prevent’	Thimek!	Ithimtek!	‘prevent for’
Rūm!	‘join’	Rumek!	Urumtek!	‘join for’
Wum!	‘touch’	Wumek!	Uwumtek!	‘touch for’
Cīn!	‘see’	Cinek!	Icintek!	‘see for’
Jin!	‘ask’	Jinek!	Ijintek!	‘ask for’
Cok!	‘soak’	Cowek!	Ocoktek!	‘soak for’
Muk!	‘think’	Muwēk!	Umuktek!	‘think for, remember’
Buuk!	‘open’	Buuwik!	Ubuuktik!	‘open for’
Thii!	‘die, loose’	Thiiwik!	Ithiiyik!	‘die, loose for, disappear’
Daa!	‘bury’	Daawēk!	Adaayek!	‘bury for’
Tēē!	‘skin’	Teewik!	Eteeyik!	‘skin for’
Rūgūm!	‘dance’	Rugumek!	Urugumtek!	‘dance for, intertain’
Vōlōng!	‘cheat, lie’	Volongek!	Ovolongtek!	‘cheat, lie for’

Exercise 33

In the following lines, underline all benefit verbs. Draw a box around all complete verbs and draw a circle around all incomplete verbs.

Ma thīna oyokona nyaapō ïthōng ivir ūūk kodolan kōrōōk, urubbothik ngaa cīnī.	Then hare came and ran until he arrived home where found his wife.
Ngaatī abui, iliba nyaapō a noko ne, puul, ivira ubukanek eet ciko tukan kēbērē.	When they opened it, hare came out powered animals in eyes with flour.
Ma balna thī natē ūtūngtēk eeta tuluuwu natē.	Then the wasps left the squirrel there.
“Niia mī ayahai ngaa ahat ïthōng ūwūrūtēk mōōliēt, . . .”	“If the queen brings you food and unties the calf . . .”
“Nē arawōthik yōkō eeti coo looc,” monogo nga reen loocī.	“He reached the ground,” although was still far from ground.”
Itik et coo ecebek et coo karteenta ïcītō, kī kuui ōlōō.	She took man, tied man to grass, and took him home.

Exercise 34

In the following lines, underline all causative verbs. Draw a box around all completive verbs and draw a circle around all incomplete verbs.

Õõt irioit ìthõng ma balna mĩ odolanit gõõla ‘They went and when reached road’

Alangan kõr otoo cìgĩnik, ìthõng oboowe Sun melted his horns and wax was
dõllĩani coo, nyatarka alangan kõra. melted because sun melted it.

Adiman balna kēlēgē tienit cīnīng. Animals were having their wedding.

Ma thīna õõt ìthõng kodolanit tammutiddin. Then they went and arrived in sky.

“Yei nyia cī adimani niia wo?” “What are you doing?”

Irregular Verbs

Some verbs do not follow the pattern shown in the verb lessons of this book. These are called irregular verbs. A few of the common irregular verbs are listed below. The list can help writers remember how to spell the verbs. The list can help translator and writers remember which verbs are completive and incomplete. This will help to write with natural Laarim grammar.

Suffixes	Incomplete	Completive		
-a/-u	<u>kavv</u> na	<u>kavv</u> na	‘I’	‘call’
	<u>avv</u> niia	<u>avv</u> niia	‘you(sg)’	
	<u>avv</u> nē	<u>avv</u> nē	‘(s)he’	
	<u>kavv</u> naaga	<u>kavv</u> naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	<u>kavv</u> na naaga	<u>kavv</u> ya naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	<u>avv</u> nu niigia	<u>avv</u> yu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	<u>avv</u> nēēgē	<u>avv</u> nēēgē	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incomplete	Completive		iito
	<u>kath</u> na	<u>kith</u> na	‘I’	‘say’
	<u>ath</u> niia	<u>ith</u> niia	‘you(sg)’	
	<u>ath</u> nē	<u>ith</u> nē	‘(s)he’	
a		ĩ		
	<u>kath</u> naaga	<u>kiito</u> naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	<u>kath</u> na naaga	<u>kiitia</u> naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	<u>ath</u> nu niigia	<u>ithinu</u> niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	<u>ath</u> nēēgē	<u>iito</u> nēēgē	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incomplete	Completive		ĩ
	<u>keeni</u> na	<u>kith</u> na	‘I’	‘is, be’

eeni	niia	ĩthĩ	niia	‘you(sg)’
ẽẽn	nẽ	ĩĩ	nẽ	‘(s)he’
keeginna	naaga	kiito	naaga	‘we (& you)’
keeginna	naaga	kiitia	naaga	‘we (not you)’
egginnu	niigia	ithinnu	niigia	‘you(pl)’
ẽẽn	nẽẽgẽ	ĩĩ	nẽẽgẽ	‘they’

Suffixes	Incomplete	Complete		
-ek/-Cek	kennei na	kenneha na	‘I’	‘tell, say’
	ennei niia	ennewu niia	‘you(sg)’	
	ennei nẽ	ennek nẽ	‘(s)he’	
	ethei	ethek		
	kennei naaga	kentek naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kenneca naaga	kenteha naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	ennecu niigia	entewu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	ennei nẽẽgẽ	entek nẽẽgẽ	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incomplete	Complete		
	kiitho na	kitiowa na	‘I’	‘enter’
	iitho niia	itiowu niia	‘you(sg)’	
	iitho nẽ	itio nẽ	‘(s)he’	
	kiitho naaga	kitiotho naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kiithoya naaga	kitiothio naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	iithoyu niigia	itiothu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	iitho nẽẽgẽ	itiotho nẽẽgẽ	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incomplete	Complete		
-u/-it	kathihi na	kithiha na	‘I’	‘listen’
	athihi niia	ithiwu niia	‘you(sg)’	(regular)
	athihi nẽ	ithik nẽ	‘(s)he’	
	kathihi naaga	kithihit naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kathikna naaga	kithikta naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	athiknu niigia	ithiktu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	athihi nẽẽgẽ	ithihit nẽẽgẽ	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incomplete	Complete		
	kongi na	katangu na	‘I’	‘sleep’
	ongi niia	atangu niia	‘you(sg)’	
	ongi nẽ	atangu nẽ	‘(s)he’	
	kogin naaga	katagutho naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kogina naaga	katagutha naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	oginu niigia	ataguthu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	ogin nẽẽgẽ	atagutho nẽẽgẽ	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incomplete	Complete		
-ik/-Cik	kaarji na	kaarjha na	‘I’	‘put’

aari <u>i</u>	niia	aari <u>wu</u>	niia	‘you(sg)’
aari <u>i</u>	nē	aari <u>k</u>	nē	‘(s)he’
kaari <u>i</u>	naaga	kaari <u>yik</u>	naaga	‘we (& you)’
kaari <u>ca</u>	naaga	kaari <u>ihā</u>	naaga	‘we (not you)’
aari <u>cu</u>	niigia	aari <u>wu</u>	niigia	‘you(pl)’
aari <u>i</u>	nēēgē	aari <u>yik</u>	nēēgē	‘they’

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	ikiyia	ivitia
-a/-Ca	kikiyā na	kikiyia na	‘I’	‘come’
	ikiyā niia	ikiyia niia	‘you(sg)’	
	ikiyā nē	ikiyia nē	‘(s)he’	
	kivitā naaga	kivitia naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kivitāha naaga	kivitaha naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	ivitā <u>wu</u> niigia	ivitawu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	ivitā nēēgē	ivitia nēēgē	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	ikiyia	ivitia
	kakuni na	kikiyā na	‘I’	‘come’
	akuni niia	ikiyā niia	‘you(sg)’	
	aku nē	ikiyā nē	‘(s)he’	
	kavu naaga	kivitā naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kavuna naaga	kivitaha naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	avunu niigia	ivitawu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	avu nēēgē	ivitia nēēgē	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	ooti	
	kiriokca na	kūūwa na	‘I’	‘go’
	irioit niia	uuwu niia	‘you(sg)’	
	irioit nē	ūūk nē	‘(s)he’	
	kirioit naaga	kōōt naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kiriokca naaga	kootia naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	iriokcu niigia	oottu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	irioit nēēgē	ōōt nēēgē	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	ooti	
	kauthi na	kūūwa na	‘I’	‘go’
	akuni niia	uuwu niia	‘you(sg)’	
	authi nē	ūūk nē	‘(s)he’	
	kotothia naaga	kōōt naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kotothiahu naaga	kootia naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	otothia <u>wu</u> niigia	oottu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	otothia nēēgē	ōōt nēēgē	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	ooti	
	koko na	kūūwa na	‘I’	‘go’
	koo			

oko	nii	uuwu	nii	‘you(sg)’
oko	nē	ũũk	nē	‘(s)he’
okoyi				
kovo	naaga	kōōt	naaga	‘we (& you)’
koo				
kovoya	naaga	kooŋia	naaga	‘we (not you)’
ovoyu	niigia	oottu	niigia	‘you(pl)’
ovo	nēēgē	ōōt	nēēgē	‘they’
ovoyi				

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	avvu	avuut
	kave na	kav <u>u</u> na	‘I’	‘stay, remain’
	ave nii	av <u>u</u> nii	‘you(sg)’	
	avī nē	av <u>u</u> nē	‘(s)he’	
	avīya nē	av <u>u</u> a nē	‘he’	
	kaati naaga	kav <u>u</u> to naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	katiya naaga	kav <u>u</u> ŋia naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	atiyu niigia	av <u>u</u> ttu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	aati nēēgē	av <u>u</u> to nēēgē	‘they’	
	aatiya nēēgē	av <u>u</u> ŋia nēēgē	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	yawu	ayait
-u/-it	kayai na	kayaha na	‘I’	‘have, possess’
	ayai nii	ayahu nii	‘you(sg)’	(regular)
	ayak nē	ayak nē	‘(s)he’	
	kayak naaga	kayait naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kayakca naaga	kayakta naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	ayakcu niigia	ayaktu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	ayak nēēgē	ayait nēēgē	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	yaha	ayakta
-a/-Ca	kayai na	kayaha na	‘I’	‘bring’
	ayai nii	ayaha nii	‘you(sg)’	
	ayak nē	ayaha nē	‘(s)he’	
	kayak naaga	kayakta naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kayahana naaga	kayaktaha naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	ayahanu niigia	ayaktawu niigia	‘you(pl)’	
	ayak nēēgē	ayakta nēēgē	‘they’	

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive	aanyik	aanycik
-ik/-Cik	kaanyi na	kaanyiha na	‘I’	‘give’
	aanyi nii	aanyiwu nii	‘you(sg)’	(regular)
	aanyi nē	aanyik nē	‘(s)he’	
	kaanyi naaga	kaanycik naaga	‘we (& you)’	
	kaanyica naaga	kaanyciha naaga	‘we (not you)’	
	aanyicu niigia	aanyciwu niigia	‘you(pl)’	

| aanyji nēēgē | aanycik nēēgē | ‘they’

Suffixes	Incompletive	Completive		
-i	karabanje na		‘I’	‘be many’
	arabanje niia		‘you(sg)’	(stative)
	arabani nē		‘(s)he’	
	karabani naaga		‘we (& you)’	
	karabani na naaga		‘we (not you)’	
	arabani nu niigja		‘you(pl)’	
	arabani nēēgē		‘they’	

Auxiliary verbs

An auxiliary verb can be used along with completive and incompletive verbs to show the time of the action. It can also show that the speaker is sure the action will happen or is not sure.

In the clauses below, the auxiliary verb **balna** ‘was, were’ is used with the completive verb **idimanit** ‘did’ and the incompletive verb **adiman** ‘doing’. It shows the action was before the time of speaking.

(From Hare 14)

Idimanit **balna** kēlēgē tienit cīnīng. The animals had their wedding.

Adiman **balna** kēlēgē tienit cīnīng. The animals were having their wedding.

The verb **balna** is used for the plural subject **kēlēgē** ‘animals’ above and for the singular subject **kēlēgīti** ‘animal’ below.

Idiman **balna** kēlēgīti tienit cīnī. The animal had his wedding.

Adiman **balna** kēlēgīti tienit cīnī. The animal was having his wedding.

The auxiliary verb **ba** ‘just was, were’ is used to show actions that happened recently.

Idimanit **ba** kēlēgē tienit cīnīng. The animals just had their wedding.

Adiman **ba** kēlēgē tienit cīnīng. The animals were just having their wedding.

The auxiliary verb **woccia** ‘will’ is used to show actions that will happen after the time of speaking. The speaker is sure the action will happen.

Idimanit **woccia** kēlēgē tienit cīnīng. (?)²⁶ The animals will have their wedding. (?)

Adiman **woccia** kēlēgē tienit cīnīng. The animals will be having their wedding.

The auxiliary verb **kafī** ‘may’ is used to show actions that may happen after the time of speaking. The speaker is not sure the action will happen.

²⁶ This sentence is a guess and needs to be checked with speakers. All other (?) in the book also need to be checked.

Idimanit **katī** kēlēgē tienit cīnīng.
Adiman **katī** kēlēgē tienit cīnīng.

The animals may have their wedding.
The animals may be having their wedding.

In summary, the auxiliary verbs are listed below.

Past	Recent past	Future (sure)	Future (not sure)
balna 'was, were'	ba 'just was, were'	woccia, koccia 'will'	katī 'may'

Exercise 35

In the following sentences, underline all auxiliary verbs.

Ma balna elemit thī kabbīrrēna. And then wasps agreed.

Ma ba natē ovocit eeta tōmōnya cigik. Then people sang for their bulls.

Ikiyia balna nyaapō buu ūrūmtē
kī kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo. Hare also came and gathered
with animals with horns.

“Mī kurubta kēlēgīt īmma cī kothii otoo “If we find another animal without horns
korgena icinac, karuk woccia ni.” among us, he will surely be killed.”

“Kacurtha koccia na kēlēgē ciko kūū? “How will I defeat these animals?”

Ma ba mī avīya gōōnīa bonato ēē, When her friend was still in bush,

Types of Clauses

We have learned about how words are grouped together into clauses and sentences. Now, we will learn about another kind of word called ‘connectors’ which join clauses and sentence. Before we talk about connectors, we first need to talk about three types of clauses—main clauses, dependent clauses, and clauses inside other clauses.

A main clause (independent clause) can be a sentence by itself; it does not require another clause in order to be a complete sentence. A dependent clause is not a sentence by itself; it requires or depends on another clause to complete the sentence. For example, the first clause below is a complete sentence. However, the second clause needs another clause to complete it.

(From Hare 32)

Ma thī thēk balna natē ūwūddīē kēlēgē. ‘And then the animals were getting drunk.’

(From Women 19)

Ma thī mī anyakcie gōōnīa wo, ‘And then when the friend was pregnant, . . .’

It needs another clause to complete it such as the following:

(From Women 19)

Ma thī mī anyakcie gōñña wo,
uduwak ngaa ñdōñd thōdth.

‘And then when the friend was pregnant,’
‘a woman told her a message.’

In the above sentence, the dependent clause **mī anyakcie gōñña wo** comes before the main clause. But in the sentence below, the dependent clause **nyatarka alangan kōra** comes after the main clause.

(From Hare 39-40)

Obowe dōllīani coo,
nyatarka alangan kōra.

The wax was melted
because the sun melted it.

Sometimes clauses are inside other clauses. These are like a cabinet or small room inside another room. Just as a cabinet is part of the room it is in, an inside clause is part of the larger clause it is in.

(From Hare 84-85)

Ennei nēēgē ne, “**Ivir** bathī **vōlōng** neccie.” They said, “The lie ran away.”

In the sentence above, the verb **ivir** ‘ran’ is a verb and **vōlōng** ‘lie’ is the subject in the clause **Ivir bathī vōlōng neccie** ‘The lie ran away.’ This entire speech is inside the clause **Ennei nēēgē** ‘They said’. In this clause, the verb is **ennei** ‘said’ and the subject is **nēēgē** ‘they’. The inside clause receives the action of the verb **ennei**. The entire speech is the object of the verb **ennei**.

Connectors (conjunctions)

Connectors (conjunctions) are words that join clauses. The connectors **īthōng, ma, thī, kēnnē, kōdē**, (and sometimes no connector) join two main clauses. The connectors **ngaatī, mī, ngī, and ngītī** join a dependent clause before a main clause. The connectors **nyatarka, monogo, kī, ngītī, ngatī, and ngaatī** join a dependent clause after a main clause.

Dependent clause connectors before a main clause	Main clause connectors	Dependent clause connectors after a main clause
ngaatī ‘when, after’	īthōng ‘and’	nyatarka ‘because’
mī ‘when, after, if’	ma ‘then, and’	monogo, ‘although, ogoogo even though’
ngī ‘while, as, if’	thī, ‘as a result, thīna then, so’	kī ‘with the result, in order to’
ngītī ‘where’	kēnnē ‘but, instead’	ngītī ‘where’
	kōdē ‘or’	ngatī ‘when, where’
	(none) ‘and’	ngaatī ‘until’

The connectors **ne**, **cī**, **cīk**, **wu**, **wuk**, **wu ba**, and **wuk balna** introduce a clause inside another clause.

Connectors for clauses inside other clauses			
ne			‘that’
cī	wu	wu ba	‘that, which, who (singular)’
cīk	wuk	wuk balna	‘that, which, who (plural)’
‘owns now’	‘recently owned’	‘owned in the past’	

We will learn about each of the above connectors in the following sections. For each connector, we list information about how it is used. Then, there are examples of the connector in stories.

Dependent Clause Connectors Before Main Clauses

In this section, we learn about three connectors joining dependent clauses before main clauses: **ngaatī**, **mī**, **ngī**, and **ngītī**.

ngaatī ‘when, after’

The connector **ngaatī** ‘when, after’ joins a dependent clause before a main clause. The **ngaatī** clause has old (known) information and an incomplete verb. **Ngaatī** occurs first in the clause and begins a new sentence with an action or speech important for what happens next. There is a comma (,) after the **ngaatī** clause before the main clause.

(From *Women 30-31*) (old information with incomplete; important action follows)

Avu (ngaa)	(Woman) stayed
īthōng īcīn et coo.	and saw the man,
Ngaatī acīnī ,	When she saw him,
itik et coo	she carried the man
uwi ciitha cīnnī īcītō.	taking him inside her house.

In *Women 30-31* above, **ngaatī acīnī** ‘when she saw him’, uses an incomplete verb for old information known from the previous lines. After this **ngaatī** clause, the action **itik** ‘carried’ and **uwi** ‘take’ are important for what happens next. The woman taking the man inside her house is important because it begins a fight between the two women.

mī ‘when, after, if’

The connector **mī** ‘when, after, if’ joins a dependent clause before a main clause. It can show a time sequence or a condition. In a time sequence, one action happens after another. In a condition, the second action only happens if the first action happens. With **mī** clauses, incomplete verbs show old or known information. Complete verbs show new or not known information. There is a comma after the **mī** clause before the main clause.

(From *Women 5-8*) (time sequence with incomplete)

Ūūk odolān kēēt īmma vūrūt.	She came to a certain tree.
Kēēta coo avī eeti tidiina cī ēēn dōtīt,	This was tree in which man was sitting,
ma thī balna eeti coo mī <u>acīn</u> ngaa coo wo,	And then when the man saw woman,
atdukai goo īnōōnō munnī cīk abiri.	he threw her some ripe fruit.

In *Women* 8 above, the **mī** clause uses the incomplete verb **acīn** ‘sees’ and introduces the known information of the man seeing the woman. The listeners know the man sees the woman from the previous lines. The action **acīn** ‘sees’ happens before the action **atdukai** ‘throw’ of the main clause. So the actions are in a time sequence.

(From *Hare* 20-21) (condition with completive)

“ Mī <u>kūrūbta</u> kēlēgīt īmma cī kothii otoo	“ If we find another animal without
korgena icinac,	horns among us,
karuk woccia ni.”	he will surely be killed.”

In *Hare* 20 above, the **mī** clause uses the completive verb **kūrūbta** ‘find’ and introduces the new information of finding an animal without horns. The action **kūrūbta** ‘find’ happens before the action **karuk** ‘kill’ of the main clause. However, the second action **karuk** will only happen if the first action **kūrūbta** happens. So, **kūrūbta** is a condition for **karuk**.

ngī ‘while, as, if’

The connector **ngī** ‘while, as, if’ joins a dependent clause before a main clause. It shows a simultaneous action or condition. With simultaneous action, two actions happen at the same time. With **ngī** clauses, incomplete verbs show old information. Completive verbs show new information. There is a comma after the **ngī** clause before the main clause.

(From *Women* 3-5) (simultaneous action with incomplete)

Avu ngaa īmma	There was a certain woman
īthōng ūūk kartēnēi baatha.	and she went to look for grass in bush.
Ūūk	She went
īthōng ma thī ngī <u>arawothi</u> nē baath oo,	and then as she reached the bush,
ūūk odolān kēēt īmma vūrūt	she came to a certain tree.

In *Women* 5 above, the **ngī** clause uses the incomplete verb **arawothi** ‘reaches’ and introduces the known information of the woman arriving in the bush. The listeners know the woman arrives in the bush from the previous lines. The action **arawothi** ‘reaches’ happens at the same time as the action **odolan** ‘comes’ of the main clause. So the actions are simultaneous.

ngītī ‘where’

The connector **ngītī** ‘where’ joins a dependent clause before a main clause. It shows the place of the action in the following main clause. It also repeats old (known) information from the previous clause.

(From Ethiopia 2-3) (place of following action; repeats information)

... ki kabaktiak Lotukei,
ma balna Lotukeya ongothiak Kawula.

Ngĩtĩ abai yōkō nēēgē,
kēngēryioi oo neccie, ìthōng abaito
Kawulatiy
ngĩtĩ ave Mũnēcĩ cobbi.

... in order to cross Lotukei area,
then they traveled across to Kawula.

Where they now lived,
those separated, and Kawulat people
lived
where there is a big Muneci tree.

In *Ethiopia 2-3*, the **ngĩtĩ** clause repeats the information about living at **Kawula** mentioned in the previous clause. The **ngĩtĩ** clause shows the place of the action **kēngēryioi** 'separated' is **Kawula**.

Exercise 36

In the sentences below, fill in each blank _____ with one correct Laarim connector. There is no need to fill in an English connector. Do not look in the full stories. Rather try to choose the correct Laarim connector by only looking at the sentences below. Choose from the following list of connectors:

ngaafĩ	‘when, after’
mĩ	‘when, after, if’
ngĩ	‘while, as, if’
ngĩtĩ	‘where’

(From Squirrel 34-40)

(Ĕbēla tuluuwu tēgēl), “Ayahanna gii
cĩ lēngēri thũgũmĩ
oo oo jōkō jōkō nathē.”
_____ athikni kabbĩrēna belinit coo wo,
avarracĩtō
ito ne, “Uwui, ēbēli nyia? Nyia
goo cĩ ōgōdn kētē wo?”

(Squirrel sang.) “Something which
has small buttock brought me here.
Oh, oh, this is a good black bull.”
_____ the wasps heard this singing,
they became angry
saying, “Hey, what are you singing?
Are you always like this?”

(From Squirrel 49-50)

“Niia _____ ayahai ngaa ahat
ìthōng ūwūrūtēk mōdēt,
nyĩ arui nyangatarit aa.”

“_____ the queen brings you food
and unties the calf,
do not kill the good feeling, ok?”

(From Squirrel 76-81)

Ethek eeti coo ne,
“Bĩt noko
ìthōng _____ ìĩ ōjōdn looci,
uk kidong cĩ dīcĩ, *tĩl tĩl tĩl*.
Ma thĩ _____ ōjōdn nabo loocĩ,
uk kidong cĩ dīcĩ, *til, til, til*.
Ma thĩ _____ ōjōdn nabo looc tōdōwa,
ruk nabo cobbi ca, *bum, bum, bum, bum*.”

The person (wasp) told (the squirrel),
“Go down,
and _____ the ground is near,
beat the smallest drum, *tiil, tiil, tiil*.
And then _____ the ground is nearer,
beat the small drum, *til, til, til*.
And then _____ ground is even nearer,
beat the large drum, *bum, bum, bum*.”

(Ethiopian 3-4)

Ngĩtĩ abai yōkō nēēgē, kēngēryioi oo neccie, ĩthōng abaito Kawulatiy ngĩtĩ ave Mūnēcĩ cobbi. _____ abai nēēgē wo, ēēn looci balna kōr kothii tammu.	Where they now lived, those separated, Kawulat people lived where there is a big Muneci tree. _____ they lived, there was sun and no rain.
---	--

Main Clause Connectors

In this section, we learn about six connectors for main clauses: **ĩthōng**, **ma**, **thĩ**, **kēnnē**, and **kōdē**.

ĩthōng ‘and’

The connector **ĩthōng** ‘and’ joins a main clause after a main clause. Each **ĩthōng** clause has new information, a complete verb, and **ĩthōng** is first in the clause. Each **ĩthōng** clause introduces an action that continues from the previous clause. The new action is thought of as being part of the previous action. In **ĩthōng** clauses, the new action usually has the same subject as in the previous clause.

(From Hare 17-18) (continues action)

Avva balna nē makayioiti ōngōli gōdōngĩ ĩthōng ennek ne, . . .	The big man—elephant called the guests and he said, . . .
--	---

(From Hare 76) (continues action)

Ibilit ĩthōng ubuito cuwal coo.	They stopped and opened the bag.
---	--

ma ‘then, and’

The connector **ma** ‘then, and’ joins a main clause. Each **ma** clause has new information, a complete verb, and moves the story a big step forward. Or the action or speech is important for what comes next. Often **ma** begins a new scene that is a big step forward or important for what comes next.

(From Women 31-32) (big step forward)

itik (ngaa) et coo uwi ciitha cīnĩ ĩcītō. Ma balna ikiyia gōdōnĩa ĩthōng iyetha et cīnĩ wo ithiwa.	(The woman) carried this man (and) took (him) into her house. Then her friend came and found her man was missing.
--	---

In *Women* 32, the actions **ikiyia** ‘came’ and **iyetha** ‘found’ are big steps forward because afterwards the two women begin fighting over the man.

thĩ or thĩna ‘as a result, then, so’

The connector **thĩ** or **thĩna** ‘as a result, then, so’ joins a main clause. Each **thĩ** clause has

new information, a completive verb, and the connector **thĩ** or **thĩna** is always the second word of the clause. Each **thĩ** clause shows an action, speech, or scene that result from the previous action, speech, or scene. A result is the outcome or what happens because of something else.

(From Hare 41-42) (action is result of previous action)

Ma balna natē ivitia eeta ciko	Then the animals came
ĩcĩnĩt nyaapō	and saw the hare
ithico otoo,	whose horns had disappeared,
ĩthōng thĩ <u>uduktiak</u> eeta kēlēgē cĩk obbitik.	and so animals the told big animals.

In *Hare* 42, the action **uduktiak eeta kēlēgē cĩk obbitik** ‘people tell big animals’ results from the action **ĩcĩnĩt ithico otoo** ‘they saw horns had disappeared’ of the previous clause. Earlier, the big animals said they would kill any animal without horns. So, because the animals learn the hare has no horns, as a result, they tell the big animals.

kēnnē ‘but, instead’

The connector **kēnnē** ‘but, instead’ joins a main clause. Each **kēnnē** clause has new information, an incomplete verb, and the connector **kēnnē** is always the second word of the clause. Each **kēnnē** clause shows an unexpected action or speech.

(From Women 21-24) (unexpected action)

Ennek gōdnā ne, “Bit avvu loota kĩ kitiryai	The friend answered, “Sit and remain
kũthũũtha doolec.”	with the black ant to receive a child.”
Ũũk thĩ nē kĩ kũthũũth,	So she went to the black ant,
ma thĩ mĩ anyi ne oo,	and then when she gave (herself),
<u>adaak</u> kēnnē kũthũũtha ngaa coo.	instead , the black ants bit the woman.

In *Women* 24, the woman was expecting to get pregnant from the ants. So the action **adaak kuthuutha ngaa coo** ‘ants bit this woman’ is unexpected.

kōdē ‘or’

The connector **kōdē** ‘or’ joins a main clause. Each **kōdē** clause has new information and the connector **kōdē** is always first in the clause. Each **kōdē** clause shows the verb, subject, or object is different than in the previous clause and the others are the same.

(From Wiseman 6) (different verb, same subject)

“Kĩbaalĩci coo arugi **kōdē** adaha?” “Is the bird alive **or** dead?”

In *Wiseman* 6, the two clauses have a different verb but the same subject. The first clause has the incomplete verb **arugi** ‘alive’ and the second clause has the incomplete verb **adaha** ‘alive’. The subject for both clauses is **kĩbaalĩci coo** ‘this bird’.

Exercise 37

In the sentences below, fill in each blank _____ with one correct Laarim connector. Do not look in the full stories. Rather, try to choose the correct Laarim connector by only looking at the sentences below. Choose from the following list of connectors:

ĩthõng	‘and’	buu	‘also’
ma	‘then, and’	kõdẽ	‘or’
thĩ, thĩna	‘as a result, then, so’		‘and’
kẽnnẽ	‘but, instead’		

(From Women 9-12)

Ēbēra thĩgõ ngaa coo
adui.

_____ balna avu
_____ utdukaak awēēn ramma,
avu ngaa coo
_____ ñĩ ne,
“_____ ngĩ ēēni kēlēgĩt
_____ ēēni et,
lūcĩa loota.”

The woman took it
and she ate it.

_____ he was staying
_____ threw down two rats,
and there was this woman
_____ she said,
“_____ if you are an animal
_____ you are human,
come down here.”

(From Women 16-18)

Itik et coo
ēcēbēk et coo karteenta ĩcītõ,
kĩ kuui õlõõ.
Õõt _____ avuto õlõõ
_____ balna natē ũrũmtē
_____ anyawoi nē,
ēēn _____ nēēgē ngaai ciko ramma.

She took this man,
tied this man onto the grass,
in order to take him home.
_____ they stayed at home
_____ were there together
_____ she became pregnant
_____ there were two woman there.

(From Squirrel 3-10)

Avu tuluuwu buu
ĩthõng idim ũũk nē buu
irioit kĩ eet ciko,
ennei _____ kabbĩrřēna tuluuwu ne,
“Yei oko goo niabu nga?
Yõkõ no niia ēēni nyia?”
Illalei _____ tuluuwu
ennei ne,
“Oo anycangu bai aneeta buu
kũũk lõgõth koko thēk na buu.”
_____ balna elemit _____ kabbĩrřēna ngatĩ
irioi kĩ tuluuwu ovoyyi tamuatidiina.

There was also a squirrel
and he also wanted to go,
going with these people,
_____ wasps said to squirrel,
“Where are you going?
Who are you now?”
_____ squirrel begged
and said,
“Please let me go also
let me go along with others also.”
_____ the wasps agreed
and they went with the squirrel to sky.

Dependent clause connectors after main clauses

In this section, we learn about three connectors joining dependent clauses after main clauses: **nyatarka**, **monogo**, **kĩ**, **ngĩtĩ**, **ngatĩ**, and **ngaatĩ**.

nyatarka ‘because’

The connector **nyatarka** ‘because’ joins a dependent clause after a main clause. Each **nyatarka** clause has new information, an incomplete verb, and the connector **nyatarka** is always first in the clause. Each **nyatarka** clause shows the reason for the previous clause. A reason clause tells why something happens; it is what causes a result. There is a comma before the **nyatarka** clause.

(From Hare 12-13) (reason)

Avu nyaapō	There was the hare
īthōng idim itio kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo wo,	and he wanted to enter with horned animals
nyatarka ōvōlōng nyaapō ōrrōt.	because the hare is always scheming.

Nyatarka clauses are common in comments from the storyteller, such as in Hare 12-13. The result **idim itio kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo** ‘he wants to enter horned animals’ happens because of the reason **idim itio kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo** ‘the hare is always scheming’.

monogo ‘although, even though’

The connector **monogo** ‘although, even though’ joins a dependent clause after a main clause. The **monogo** clause has new information and the **monogo** connector is first in the clause. The **monogo** clause gives a different meaning than the previous clause.

(From Squirrel 87-91) (opposite meaning)

Oko thī tuluuwu	Then the squirrel went down
īthōng ma thī mī arawothi acīn ne	and when he approached and saw that
ī ōjōōnti kēēna wo,	the ground was near,
ūrūk kidong cobbi wa, <i>boom boom boom</i> ,	he mistakenly beat big drum <i>boom</i> . .
eted thī eeti cobbi looron	then the big wasp cut the rope
a ne, “Nē arawothik yōkō eeti coo looc,”	saying, “He reached the ground,”
monogo nga reen looci.	although he was far from ground.

In *Squirrel* 87-91, **nga reen looci** ‘he was far from the ground’ is opposite in meaning from the previous speech **Nē arawothik yōkō eeti coo looc** ‘He reached the ground.’

kī ‘with the result, in order to’

The connector **kī** ‘with the result, in order to’ joins a dependent clause after a main clause. The **kī** clause has new information, a subjunctive verb, and the **kī** connector is first in the clause. Each **kī** clause shows the result, goal, or purpose of the previous clause. A result is the outcome or what happens because of something else.

(From Women 15-16) (purpose or goal)

Ngaatī acīnī ngaa coo ēēn et,	When the woman saw that he was a man,
itik et coo	she took this man
ēcēbēk et coo karteenta īcītō,	and tied this man onto the grass,

kī kuui ðlðð. **in order to** take him home.

In *Women* 15-16, **kuui ðlðð** ‘take him home’ is the purpose or goal of **ēcēbēk et coo karteenta īcītō** ‘tied this man onto the grass’.

kī ‘and, with’

The connector **kī** ‘and, with, to’ joins a noun phrase after a main clause or noun phrase. It can join the last noun of a list, show accompaniment or the goal of the previous clause. The connector **kī** is first in the phrase. The noun after **kī** is in object case.

In *Hare* 56-57, **nyebeliang** ‘antelope’ is the last noun in a list of five nouns. The connector **kī** begins this noun phrase.

(From *Hare* 56-57) (list)

Eberya eeta kēlēgē cīk ēēn tur oo, They chose five animals—
merunga, ciith, nakur, mēgēr, gazelle, dikdik, wildcat, gazelle,
kī nyebeliang. **and** antelope.

In *Hare* 3, **ūrūmtē** ‘gathered’ is done in accompaniment with **kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo** ‘animals that have horns’. The connector **kī** begins this now phrase to show the action is done with the animals.

(From *Hare* 3) (accompaniment)

Ikiyia balna nyaapō buu ūrūmtē Hare also came and gathered
kī kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo. with animals with horns.

In *Wise* 2, **agamit kībaalīc īthōng otti** ‘they caught a bird and took it’ is done for the goal **et cī a nē kēgēēnyi** ‘person who is wise’. The connector **kī** begins this now phrase to show the action is intended for this person.

(From *Wise* 2) (goal)

Agamit kībaalīc īthōng otti They caught a bird and took it
kī et cī a nē kēgēēnyi wo. to a person who said he is wise.

ngīti ‘where’

The connector **ngīti** ‘where’ joins a dependent clause after a main clause. The **ngīti** connector shows the place of the action in the previous clause.

(From *Squirrel* 11-12) (place of previous action)

“Gaama aneeta thūgūūm **ngīti** lēēngēri wo,” “Hold my buttock **where** it is small, . . .”

In *Squirrel* 11-12, **ngīti lēēngēri** ‘where it is small’ shows the place for the action **gaama** ‘hold’.

ngati ‘when, where’

The connector **ngatī** ‘when, where’ joins a dependent clause after a main clause. The **ngatī** clause has new information and an incomplete verb. It describes the time and place of the action in the main clause.

(From *Squirrel 9-10*)

Ma balna elemit thi kabbīrrēna Then wasps agreed
ngatī irioi kī tuluuwu ovoyyi tammutiddina. **when** they went with squirrel to sky.

In *Squirrel 9-10*, the **ngatī** clause describes the time and place of the action **elemit** ‘agreed’.

ngaatī ‘when, after’

The connector **ngaatī** ‘when, after’ joins a dependent clause after a main clause. The **ngaatī** clause has new information and an incomplete verb. The **ngaatī** clause shows important actions resulting from what happened in the main clause.

(From *Ethiopia 82-83*)

Ngaatī arawothice lōōgō ciko dōō coo, When these sons accompanied this girl,
odolanit kōrōōk they reached village
umudiothik yatīnnī kī ngōōnōgī, and met mother and her girls,
ngaatī ēbēlbēlī nēēgē vēlēk, **until** they all became happy,
ngaatī agawoni, **until** they knew each other,
ngaatī ngīthōroi ciko atieni natē. **until** these youth were married there.

In *Ethiopia 82-83*, **ngaatī** joins three dependent clauses after a main clause. Each **ngaatī** clause has new information that shows important actions resulting from what happened in the main clause.

Exercise 38

In the sentences below, fill in each blank _____ with one correct Laarim connector.
Choose from the following list of connectors:

nyatarka	‘because’
monogo	‘although, even though’
kī	‘as a result, in order to’
ngīfī	‘where’
ngatī	‘when, where’
ngaatī	‘until’

(From *Hare 14-16*)

Adiman balna kēlēgē tienit cīnīng,	Animals were having their wedding,
adaak kidi,	and they ate meat
awūd mērtē,	and they drank beer
īthōng _____ kūrūgūmīt	and _____ they danced

rũgũmõn cobbi gimma noko.
(From Hare 91-92)

Ma thĩ balna avu nyaapõ
ĩthõng ũrũk nẽnẽ,
_____ nẽ ãẽn et cĩ ãgẽnyi õrrõt.

(Squirrel 9-10)

Ma balna elemit thi kabbĩrrẽna
_____ irioi _____ tuluuwu ovoyyi
tammutiddina.

(From Squirrel 11-12)

“Gaama aneeta thũgũũm _____ lãẽngẽri wo,”

(From Squirrel 89-91)

Eted thĩ eeti cobbi looron
a ne, “Nẽ arawothik yõkõ eeti coo looc,”
_____ nga reen looci.

(From Ethiopia 3)

Ngĩtĩ abai yõkõ nẽẽgẽ,
kẽngẽryioi oo neccie, ãthõng abaito Kawulatiy

_____ ave Mũnẽcĩ cobbi.

(From Ethiopia 55)

Ĩthõng eceba ngĩthõroi ciko guo rĩmmĩa
itionito thĩ et coo,
_____ odolani Tataman.

a very big dance.

And so the hare stayed
and lived well
_____ he is very clever.

Then wasps agreed
_____ they went _____ squirrel to sky.

“Hold my buttock _____ is small, . . .”

Then the big wasp cut the rope
saying, “He reached the ground,”
_____ he was far from ground.

Where they now lived,
those separated, and Kawulat people
lived
_____ there is a big Muneci tree.

And these youth tied fire with wood
then accompanied this person
_____ they reached Tataman.

Connectors for clauses inside other clauses

In this section, we learn about seven connectors beginning clauses inside other clauses:
ne, cĩ, cĩk, wu, wuk, wu ba, and wuk balna.

ne ‘that’

The connector **ne** ‘that’ joins a clause inside a larger clause. The clause introduced by **ne** is in [brackets] below. The **ne** connector shows a direct or indirect speech which is the object of the verb in the large clause.

(From Hare 28-29) (direct speech with incomplete)

A kãnnẽ nyaapõ [**ne**, “Ii cĩ gõõ kaari na Surprisingly, the hare said, “Yes, I
otoo
cĩganĩk ciitha!”] always put my horns in my house!”

In *Hare 28-29*, the **ne** connector has a comma after it. **Ne** introduces a direct speech that has the incomplete verb **kaari** ‘I put’. The entire speech **Ii cĩ gõõ kaari na otoo cĩganĩk ciitha** ‘Yes, I always put my horns in my house’ receives the action **a** ‘says’ in the larger clause.

cĩ, cĩk, wu, wuk, wu ba, wuk balna ‘that, which, who, of’

Negatives

Negatives show the opposite meaning of the following words. They come before noun phrases. They come before completive verbs for negative commands. And they come before main clauses and relative clauses.

In *Hare 20*, the negative **kothii** ‘there is no’ comes before the noun **otoo** ‘horns’. It shows this noun does not exist or is not present.

(From *Hare 20*) (before noun phrase)

Mī kūrūbta kēlēgē ĩmma cī **kothii** otoo If we find animal that has **no** horns

In *Squirrel 29*, the negative **nyī** ‘do not’ comes before the completive verb **inyōryēta** ‘shame’ to show the opposite meaning of the clause **inyōryēta laang** ‘shame friend’. **Nyī** is used to show negative commands. Negative commands have completive verbs instead of command verbs.

(From *Squirrel 29*) (before completive verb for negative command)

“**Nyī** inyōryēta laang.” “Do **not** shame your friend.”

In *Squirrel 64-65*, the negative **acī** ‘does not happen’ comes before the main clause **athik nē buu** ‘he also listening’ to show the opposite meaning of the clause.

(From *Squirrel 64-65*) (before main clause)

Akku gōō eeti coo ḍbōdēci nabo tuluuwu, This person came, squirrel repeated,
acī athik nē buu. he also not listening.

In *Women 12-13*, the negative **athii** ‘that does not’ comes before the relative clause **cī eēni kēlēgīt** ‘that is an animal’ to show the opposite meaning of the clause.

(From *Women 12-13*) (before relative clause)

Lucia loota mī thong **athii** cī eēni kēlēgīt. Come down if you are not an animal.

In summary, the list of negatives is shown below, along with their place in the sentence and what they show.

Negative	Before	Shows	
kothii	noun phrase	no noun exists	‘there is no’
nyī	completive verb	opposite of command	‘do not’
acī, ĩnīnga	main clause	opposite of clause	‘does not happen’
athii	relative clause	opposite of relative clause	‘that does not’

Exercise 40

In the sentences below, fill in each blank _____ with one correct negative. Choose from the above list of negatives. The words following the blank should help you decide which

negative to use in the blank.

“Yei niigia _____ nga ukonu”	“Please do not fight.”
“Avvu tiv _____ thōōth nicco.”	“Keep quiet about such things.”
Avuto thī _____ ukoi ūrūmte nēēgē.	So they stayed together without fighting.
“_____ arui nyangatarit aa.”	“Don’t kill the good feeling, ok?”
Akku eeti coo irioni _____ athikne.	Person came to advise, he not listening.
Ajaa kēlēgē wūk _____ cī ayak otoo ēē.	Animals that don’t have horns came.

Direct and Indirect speech

In stories, it is common for story tellers to mention what those in the story say. These are called speeches. When the stories are written down, the speeches need to be marked differently than other words in the story. In this lesson, we will learn about two kinds of speeches and how they are marked in writing.

Direct speech is the words actually spoken by a person or animal in the story. In the sentence below, only the words spoken by the hare are the direct speech—**Cī gōō kari na otoo cīganīk cītha**.

A kēnnē nyapō ne , “Cī gōō kari na otoo cīganīk cītha.”	Then the hare said, “I always put my horns in my house.”
--	--

The words **a kēnnē nyapō ne** are spoken by the story teller to introduce the speech, but are not part of the direct speech. However, the direct speech is a part of the main clause **a kēnnē nyapō ne** like a room inside a house.

Quotations marks “ ” are placed before and after direct speech.

Indirect speech describes the meaning of what a person or animal in the story says, but is not the actual words spoken. In the sentence below, the words **ovo adiman tienit cīnīng cī tiento** are indirect speech.

Ovo kabbīrrēna da tamuatidiina a ne , ovo adiman tienit cīnīng cī tiento.	The wasps were going to the sky saying that they were going for their wedding feast of marriage.
---	--

The actual speech may have been something like **kovo kadiman tienit cinang cī tiento** ‘we are going for our wedding feast of marriage’. The indirect speech gives the meaning of what was said, but not the actual words. No quotation marks are placed before or after

indirect speech.

The word **ne** ‘that’ nearly always introduces both direct and indirect speech. This **ne** ‘that’ with heavy vowel (and High tone) should not be confused with the pronoun **nē** ‘he, she’ with light vowel (and Low tone). A comma is placed after **ne** ‘that’ in both direct and indirect speech.

The following are important punctuation rules for speech.

Punctuation Rules for Speech

- There must be a comma(,) following **ne** ‘that’ used to introduce direct and indirect speech.
- There must be quotation marks (“ ”) before and after direct speech.
- The first word in a direct speech must have a capital (large) letter.
- There must be a period (.) at the end of a direct speech.
- For indirect speech, quotation marks are not used and the first word does not have a capital letter.

Exercise 41

In the following lines, put a comma after each word **ne** ‘that’. Write quotation marks before and after each direct speech. Put periods at the end of each direct speech if needed. Draw a circle around any letter that should be a capital.

Īthōng ennek ne kayak naaga kōr cobbi
cī kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo doo

And he said now we are having a
big day for the animals with horns

Avu ngaa coo ĩthōng ĩĩ ne narēringĩ cannĩ
nga?

The woman asked where is my
broom?

Ennei kēlēgē kēnnē nēgē ne ivir bathĩ
vōlōng neccie

Then the animals told them the lie
has escaped

Avu balna nyaapō
ĩthōng umuk ĩĩ ne kacūrtha koccia na
kēlēgē ciko kũũ?

The hare was thinking
and said how can I defeat these animals?

Glossary

The following important words are from the *Laarim Consonant and Vowel Book*.

Word	Example	Definition
<u>syllable</u>	baa or roc in baaroc 'rope'	The parts of a word that can be divided according to beats.
<u>consonant</u>	b , r , and c in baaroc 'rope'	Letter sounds that begin or end syllables; a consonant cannot be a syllable by itself.

<u>doubled consonant</u>	gg in tuggu 'shelter'	A consonant in the middle of a word that slows down the word and seems to bounce like a car going over a speed bump. When the word is said slowly, the consonant sound is both at the end of the first syllable (tug) and at the beginning of the second syllable (gu).
<u>single consonant</u>	g in kugul 'crocodile'	In the middle of a word, a single consonant sounds smooth. When the word is said slowly, there is no consonant sound at the end of the first syllable (ku), but only at the beginning of the second syllable (gul).
<u>vowel</u>	aa , and o in baaroc 'rope'	Letter sounds that are in the middle of a syllable; a vowel can be a syllable by itself.
<u>heavy vowel</u>	o and oo in logoo 'young man'	The sound of vowel letters <i>without tildas</i> ~.
<u>light vowel</u>	ō and ōō in lōgōōth 'young men'	The sound of vowel letters <i>with tildas</i> ~.
<u>long vowel</u>	aa in ahaat 'tongue'	The sound of doubled vowel letters which take longer to pronounce.
<u>short vowel</u>	a in ahat 'food'	The sound of single vowel letters which take less time to pronounce.

The following important words are discussed in the *Laarim Grammar Book*.

Word	Example	Definition
grammar	nouns, verbs, pronouns, phrases, clauses, sentences	word categories and how they go together
prefix	k- 'I' in kacini 'I see'	an attachment at the beginning of a word that has meaning
suffix	-nya 'plural' in awuthitnya 'life, situation'	an attachment at the end of a word that has meaning
noun	ngaa 'woman'	a person, place, object, or idea
singular noun	et 'person'	noun form used for one of the noun
plural noun	eeta 'persons'	noun form used for more than one of the noun
relational noun	ngōōna 'my sister'	noun that describes a relationship between people
verb	atdūkai 'threw'	a word that describes an action, motion, state, change, or can be used as an equal sign between two or more words
completive verb	Idim eeti dōllian. 'Man <u>took</u> wax.'	action that is thought of as being finished or complete
incompletive verb	Adim eeti dōllian. 'Man <u>just now took</u> wax.'	action that is thought of as still continuing or going on

clause	ngaatī acīnī ‘when she saw him’	a group of words with one verb
sentence	uwi ciitha cīnnī ičītō ‘she took him inside her house’	a group of words with one or more clauses that can stand alone
phrase	et īmma ‘a certain person’	a group of words; can be without a verb
punctuation	B, . “ “	the way of marking sentences and clauses in writing
subject	Adaak kūthūūtha ngaa ‘A black ant bit the woman’	a noun that is the <i>doer</i> of the action
object	Adaak kūthūūtha ngaa ‘A black ant bit the woman’	a noun that is the <i>receiver</i> of the action
singular subject marker	Īcīn eeti coo ngaa īmma. ‘This man saw a certain woman.’	a suffix on a singular noun that shows the noun is a subject; most common is -i
plural subject marker	Adaak kūthūūtha ngaa coo. ‘Black ants bit the woman.’	a suffix on a plural noun that shows the noun is a subject; most common is -a, -na
singular location marker	Avu ngaa coo ōjōōn kēēta. ‘The woman stayed near the tree.’	a suffix on a singular noun that shows the noun is a location; most common is -a
plural location marker	Avu ngaa coo ōjōōn kaunyaī. ‘The woman stayed near the father-in-laws.’	a suffix on a plural noun that shows the noun is a location; most common are -ei, -nei
singular possessive marker	Īcīn ngaa coo ahat cī bōwōlō. ‘The woman saw the food of the tortoise.’	a suffix on a singular noun that shows the noun is a possessor of a singular noun; most common is -o
singular possessive marker of plural noun	Īcīn ngaa coo aheenin cīk bōwōlak. ‘The woman saw the foods of the tortoise.’	a suffix on a singular noun that shows the noun is a possessor of a plural noun; most common is -ak
plural possessive marker	Īcīn ngaa coo aheenin cīk bōwōluanu. ‘The woman saw foods of the tortoises.’	a suffix on a plural noun that shows the noun is a possessor; most common is -nu
pronoun	nē ‘she’	a word that takes the place of a noun; it is a substitute or replacement for a noun previously mentioned
subject	nēnē ‘he’	a word that takes the place of a person or

pronoun		persons <i>doing</i> the action
object pronoun	īnōōnō ‘him’	a word that takes the place of a person or persons <i>receiving</i> the action
location pronoun	īcīnnī ‘him’	a word that takes the place of a person where the action is <i>located</i>
possessive pronoun	cīnīng ‘their’	a word that takes the place of someone that something belongs to or is possessed by
singular possessive pronoun	cīnnī tienit ‘his wedding’	a pronoun used with a <i>singular</i> noun to take the place of its owner
plural possessive pronoun	cīgīnīk otoo ‘his horns’	a pronoun used with a <i>plural</i> noun to take the place of its owner
stative verb	Gērtha mērtīa. ‘The beer <u>is</u> bad.’	a verb that describes the way things are
demonstrative pronoun	Ēēn coo kēlēgīt. ‘ <u>This</u> is an animal.’	a word that takes the place of a noun by pointing to it or showing it
indefinite pronoun	Ēēn īmma kēlēgīt. ‘ <u>Another</u> is an animal.’	a word that take the place of a noun that has not yet been mentioned or that does not refer to a specific noun
equative clause	Een goryiaiti volongnyiait. ‘The thief is a spy.’	a clause like an equation in mathematics; it says one thing is the same as another
presentational clause	Avī goryiaiti. ‘There is a thief.’	a clause that tells about or presents a new person to those listening. Those listening may not know about the person presented or may need to be reminded about the person.
adjective clause	Tuur goryiaiti. ‘The thief is short.’	a clause that uses a stative verb to describe a noun or pronoun.
relative clause	Īcīn ngaa ahāt [cī bōwōlo]. Woman saw the food of the tortoise.	A clause inside another clause beginning with the connector cī, cīk, wu, wuk, wu ba, or wuk balna ‘that, which, who, of’ used to identify or talk about a certain noun—shows it is not just any noun
adjective	mērtē cī gērthē ‘bad beer’	a word that describes or gives information about a noun; a singular adjective follows cī
plural adjective	mērtēēn cīk gērthek ‘bad beers’	a word that describes a plural noun; usually has the marker -k ; follows cīk
adjectival noun	Avī balna gērthetini ciitha iico. ‘There was <u>badness</u> inside the house.’	an adjective used as a noun; most common suffixes are -enti, -inti, -tini, -theti, or -thiti
number adjective	aweenit codoi ‘one rat’	a word that describes a noun with a number
demonstrative adjective	Uruit eeta kēlēgīt coo. ‘People killed <u>coo</u> .’	a word that describes a noun by pointing or showing

	<u>this animal.</u> '	
indefinite adjective	Uruit eeta kēlēgīt īmma. 'People killed <u>a certain animal.</u> '	a word that describes a noun that has not yet been mentioned or is not specific
object locative	Ūūk odolān ngāa kēēt vurut. 'The woman went and arrived <u>under</u> a tree.'	a word that gives the location of an object noun; follows the noun
location locative	Ongi ngāa kēēta vurtia. 'The woman slept <u>under</u> a tree.'	a word that gives the location of a location noun; follows the noun
adverb	Ōvōlōng nyaapō ōrrōt. 'The hare deceives <u>a lot.</u> '	a word that describes or gives information about a verb
manner adverb	tamonoko 'quickly'	a word that describes the way the action is done
time adverb	yōkō 'now'	a word that describes the time of the action.
place adverb	reena 'far'	a word that describes the place of the action.
question pronouns	Ngēnē cī uruk kēlēgē? 'Who killed animals?'	a pronoun that takes the place of the word asked about in questions
verb subject marker	Katuranī na et. 'I wake up a person.'	a prefix or suffix on a verb that shows which of six subjects is used; most common are k- -i na , -i niia , - ne , k- -na naaga , -nu niigia , -it nēgē
verb object marker	Idima ngāa aneeta 'The woman took me.'	a suffix on a verb that shows which of six objects is used; most common are -a or -angu aneeta , -i aniita , - īnōōnō , -et or -etu agēēta , -ung agiita , - īgōōgō
subjunctive verb	Aanyi eeti et kumuk 'The man is allowed <u>to think.</u> '	a verb that usually follows and gives a reason or purpose for a previous verb; usually has the prefix kV-
command	Uduit (niigia) ahat! 'Eat food!'	a verb that tells or orders someone to do an action. It is a subjunctive verbs used for niia 'you (sg)' or niigia 'you (pl)'
singular command verb	Repan (niia) ciith! 'Search the house!'	a verb used to order or command one person to do something
plural command verb	Erepanīt (niigia) ciith! Search the house!	a verb used to order or command more than one person to do something
verbal noun	Abunna muventi. 'Thinking is good.'	a verb that is used as a noun; common suffixes are -enti , -inti , -anti , -ithi , -eneti , -wenti , -winti
derived verb	uuk/uukit 'hit, beat'; uktoi/uktoi 'fight'	a verb that comes from a common verb; usually similar in meaning to the common verb
direction verb	Ebela tuluuwu tōmōt cīnnī. 'The	a verb that shows the action is towards something. The suffix is -a/-Ca .

	squirrel <u>sings</u> to his bull.’	
reciprocal verb	Ebeloi gii coo nyia? ‘What is this thing <u>singing</u> in front of us?’	a verb that shows the action is done together with others, in front of others, or by one person over time. The suffix is -oi/-Coi .
instrument verb	Atdukai gōō ĩnōōnō munnī cīk abiri. ‘He <u>throws</u> her some ripe fruit.’	a verb that shows the action is done with something, such as a certain tool or can show importance to the object. The suffix is -ai/-Cai .
passive verb	Uruwe balna kēlēgīti. ‘The animal <u>was killed</u> .’	a verb that shows a subject noun (in nominative case) is the receiver of the action. This noun can be the doer and receiver of the action, or just the receiver of the action. The suffix is -e/-Ce .
benefit verb	Ēcēbēk ngaa et coo karteenta ĩcītō. ‘Woman <u>tied</u> this man to grass.’	a verb that shows the action is done for someone or to something. The suffix is -ek/-Cek or -ik/-Cik .
irregular verb	avva nē ‘he calls’, avvu nē ‘he called’	a verb that does not follow the pattern shown in the verb lessons of this book
auxiliary verb	balna ‘was, were’ woccia ‘will’	a verb used along with completive and incompletive verbs to show the time of the action; it can also show the speaker is sure the action will happen or is not sure
main clause (independent clause)	Ma thī thēk balna natē ūwūddīē kēlēgē. ‘And then the animals were getting drunk.’	a clause that can be a sentence by itself; it does not require another clause in order to be a complete sentence.
dependent clause	Ma thī mī anyakcie gōōnīa wo, ‘And then when the friend was pregnant, . . .’	a clause not a sentence by itself; it requires or depends on another clause to complete the sentence.
connector (conjunction)	īthōng ‘and’, ngī ‘while, as, if’, nyatarka ‘because’	a word that joins clauses
time sequence	Ma thī balna eeti coo mī acīn ngaa coo wo, atdukai goo ĩnōōnō munnī cīk abiri. ‘And then after the man saw woman, he threw her some ripe fruit.’	two actions that happen one after the other
simultaneous action	ngī arawothi ne baath oo, ūūk	two actions that happen at the same time

	odolan kēēt īmma vūrūt. ‘as she reached the bush, she came to a certain tree.’	
condition	“Mī kūrūbta kēlēgīt īmma cī kothii otoo korgena icinac, karuk woccia ni.” “If we find another animal without horns among us, he will surely be killed.”	the second action only happens if the first action happens
reason	Avu nyaapō īthōng idim itio kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo wo, nyatarka ðvōlōng nyaapō ðrrōt. ‘There was the hare and he wanted to enter with horned animals <u>because the hare is always scheming.</u> ’	why something happens; what causes a result
result	Ma balna natē ivitia eeta ciko icīnīt nyaapō ithico otoo, īthōng thī uduktiak eeta kēlēgē cīk obbitik. ‘Then the animals came and saw the hare whose horns had disappeared, and <u>so animals the told big animals.</u> ’	the outcome; what happens because of something else
negative	“Nyī inyōryēta laang.” “Do <u>not</u> shame your friend.”	a word that shows the opposite meaning of following words
direct speech	A kēnnē nyapō ne, “Cīgō kari na otoo cīganīk ciitha.” Then the hare said, “ <u>I always put my horns in my house.</u> ”	the words actually spoken by a person or animal in a story
indirect speech	Ovo kabbīrrīna da tamuatidiina a ne,	the words that mean what a person or animal in the story says, but are not the actual words

ovo adiman tienit
cīnīng cī tiento.
 ‘The wasps were
 going to the sky
 saying that they were
going for their
wedding feast of
marriage.’

spoken.

Answers to Exercises

Answers to the exercises of this book are given below. Instead of making a circle or box around a word, sometimes the word is underlined or a check (✓) is used.

Exercise 1

Checks (✓) are used instead of circles.

Left	Test Word			Right
ōngōlūa	ōngōl	ōngōl ua	'elephant'	ōngōl ua
būlūcūa	būlūc	būlūc ūa	'lake, pond'	būlūc ua ✓
ngōdōtīōk	ngōdōt	ngooti ok	'winds, breaths'	ngooti ok ✓
kēbēreec	kēbērē	kēbēreec	'eye'	kebereec ✓
duwwēēn ✓	duwwo	duwween	'wells'	duwween
ivirīt ✓	vir	ivirīt	'Run!'	ivirit
ijinīt	kijin	ijinīt nēēgē	'they ask'	ijinīt ✓
ūrūgūmīt ✓	kūrūgūm	ūrūgūmīt nēēgē	'they dance'	ūrūgūmit
kidocūa	kidoci	kidoc ūa	'hammers'	kidoc ua ✓
logorēēta	logoro	logore eta	'gourds'	logore eta ✓
tīvēēn	tīī	tīīvēē n	'crowns'	tīīvēē n ✓
goryiaa	goryiak	goryiaa	'thieves'	goryia ha ✓
nyiiloe	nyiilok	nyii lohe	'months'	nyii lowe ✓
katūēēta	katūk	katūgēē ta	'doors'	katūgēē ta ✓
vatiua	vatiḱ	vatiḱ ua	'fishing sticks'	vatiw ua ✓
vallait ✓	vallak	vallahit	'claw (sg)'	vallahit
thiiryok ✓	thiir	thiiry ok	'mountain, hill'	thiiriok
logureenito	logureenit	logure ento	'insect(poss)'	logure ento ✓
amutei ✓	amut	amutey	'with saliva'	amutey
tuwayiowii	tuwayiok	tuwayiowiy	'at shepherds'	tuwayiowiy ✓
eetinei ✓	eeta	eetiney	'from people'	eetiney

Exercise 2

Alangan kōr otoo cīgīnīk.

‘The sun melted his horns.’

Adaak <u>kēlēgē</u> kidi.	‘The animals ate meat.’
Ūdūktīak <u>eeta</u> <u>kēlēgē</u> cīk obbitik ne, . . .	‘The people told the big animals, . . .’
Avva balna <u>makayyioiti</u> <u>gōōnōgī</u> .	‘The big man was calling the guests.’
Īcīn <u>ngaa</u> ĩmma <u>et</u> coo.	‘A certain woman saw this man.’

Exercise 3

Ma thī <u>ngaa</u> coo ēnnēk <u>gōōnī</u> ne,	‘And then the woman told her friend, ‘
ivitia <u>nyīgarnogī</u> <u>doolec</u> <u>etevetieet</u> agēēta kwaa,	‘Her step-mothers come, the children lay down skin mats for us’
kanyama na kuuwa ĩcī <u>baatīnī</u>	‘I come, going to her father’
ma katina <u>iinya</u> ĩcīk elemai <u>yaatinnic</u>	‘and then (according to the the number of) days to which her mother agrees’
ēnnēk <u>nyaapō</u> <u>gōōnōgī</u> nē,	‘the hare told his friends, ‘

Exercise 4

<u>Alangan</u> kōr otoo cīgīnīk.	‘The sun melted his horns.’
<u>Avu</u> ngaa ĩmma ĩthōng <u>ūūk</u> kartēnnēī baatha.	‘Woman went for grass in bush.’
Ūdūktīak eeta kēlēgē cīk obbitik ne, . . .	‘The people told the big animals, . . .’
<u>Avva</u> balna makayyioiti gōōnōgī.	‘The big man was calling the guests.’
Īcīn ngaa ĩmma et coo.	‘A certain woman saw this man.’
<u>Avī</u> balna eeti ĩmma ĩthōng <u>otod</u> kēēta,	‘There was a certain person who climbed a tree.’

Exercise 5

<u>S</u> <u>iliba</u> nyaapō	the hare came out
<u>C</u> ngaatī <u>athikni</u> kabbīrrēna belinit coo wo	when the wasps heard this singing
<u>P</u> kēēt ĩmma	certain tree

<u>C</u>	ma thī ngī <u>arūgūm</u> kabbīrrēna wo	and then when the ants were dancing
<u>P</u>	kōr cobbi	big day
<u>S</u>	<u>adaak</u> kēnnē kūthūūtha ngaa coo	the black ant bit the woman
<u>P</u>	<u>rūgūmōn</u> cobbi gimma nōkō	very big dance

Exercise 6

Words are corrected instead of circled.

Kēēta coo <u>avī</u> eeti tidiina	this was the tree in which the person was sitting
cī <u>ēēn</u> dōtīt.	who was a man
Ma thī balna eeti coo	and then the man was
mī <u>ačīn</u> ngaa coo wo,	when he saw this woman
<u>atdūkaī</u> gōō īnōōnō mūnnī cīk <u>abiri</u> .	he threw her some ripe fruit
<u>ēbēra</u> thīgō ngaa coo.	the woman took it
<u>Ēbēra</u> thīgō ngaa coo,	the woman took it
<u>adūī</u> .	ate it

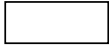
Exercise 7

<u>Alangan</u> kōp dōllīan	‘The sun melted the wax.’
<u>Adaak</u> kēlēgē kidi .	‘The animals ate meat.’
<u>Ūdūktīak</u> eeta kēlēgē cīk obbitik he, . . .	‘The people told the big animals, . . .’
<u>Avva</u> balna makayyioiti gōōnōgī .	‘The big man was calling the guests.’
<u>Atdūkaī</u> eeti mūnnī cīk abiri.	‘A man threw fruit that was ripe.’

Exercise 8

Subjects are underlined twice instead of circled.

<u>Avva</u> balna <u><u>nē</u></u> <u><u>makayyioiti</u></u> <u><u>ōngōli</u></u> gōōnōgī	‘The big man–the elephant–was calling his friends’
---	--



Ayakta eeta nyaapō ‘the people brought the hare’
 Ikiyia kēlēgīti ĩmma ĩcīn ĩnōōnō ‘another animal came to see him’
 ennei kēnnē kabbīrrēna tuluuwu ne, ‘but the wasps said to the squirrel,’
 Ma thī ngaa coo ennek gōōnī ne, . . . ‘So the woman told her friend, . . .’
 Ma thī mī anyakcie gōōnīa wo, ‘And then when friend was
 ĩjin gōōnīa ennek ne, pregnant, her friend asked, . . .’

Exercise 9

Locations are underlined twice instead of circled.

ũk ngaa coo ciitha ‘The woman went to the house’
 Ongi nē kēēta vurtia ‘He (hare) slept under the tree’
 ēcēbēk et coo kartenta ĩcītō ‘She (woman) tied the man onto
 the grass bundle’
 Ũk nyaapō kodolan kōrōōk. ‘The hare reached the
 compound.’
Avu ngaa ĩmma ĩthōng ũk kartēnei baatha. ‘A certain woman went for grass
 in the bush.’
 Ũk ĩthōng ma thī ngī arawothi nē baathoo, . . . ‘She went, and then when she
 reached the bush, . . .’
Ovo kabbīrrēna da tamuatiina ‘The wasps were going to the sky’

Exercise 10

Possessives are underlined twice instead of circled.

“Ee aribana ir cīk doolecak.” ‘You are testing milks of the
 child.’
 kawudii na baatī tiento noko ‘I am continually praising the
 father of the wedding’
 athii nēēgē cī ovoyi kōrōōkjowei ĩcīk Didingawu ‘they do not go to the homes of the
 Didinga’
 Ma thī balna ivitia nē kī nyakamuranya cīk ‘Then she came with in-laws of
kabbīrrēnu. the wasps.’
 Ĩ baatī dooleco ne, ‘The father of the child says,
 ĩthōng ma nabō thōōtha cī Nyekuco a ne, ‘and also the Word of God says’
 ngatarka niia athii cī owobi ngīran cī eetu ‘because you do not follow the

tradition of the people’

Exercise 11

Ūūk thī nē kī kūthūūth, ma thī mī anyi nē oo, ‘So she went to the black ant, and then
when she gave herself, . . .’
Atdūkai eeti inōōnō mūnnī cīk abiri. ‘A man threw to her fruit that was
ripe.’
Itik ngaa et coo uwi ciitha cīnnī icītō. ‘A woman carried this man and took
him inside her house.’
“Narērūngi cannī nga?” ‘Where is my broom?’
“Yei niigia nyī nga ūkonu.” ‘Please, do not fight.’

Exercise 12

singular possessives are underlined twice instead of circled.

“Adim ngēnē narērūngi cannī ngato?” ‘Who took my broom?’
“Yōkō niigia avuut niigia vëlēk ito ngaai cīganik.” ‘Now, both you, stay and be
my wives.’
Īthōng alangan kōr otoo cīginik. ‘And the sun melted his horns.’
Adiman balna kēlēgē tienit cīning. ‘The animals were having their
wedding feast.’
Atūrran thī gōō nedo ēlē cīnnī. ‘He was sometimes trying to wake
himself up.’
“Avī kōrōōgi cannie icidiinu.” ‘My home is on the other side.’
Ma ba natē ovoccit eeta tōmōnya ḡgīk. ‘And the people were singing for
their bulls.’

Exercise 13

“Ivitia da icīnīt nyaapō
ithico otoo wuginēk.” ‘Come see hare
whose horns disappeared.’
“Avī kōrōōgi wunnie icidiinu.” ‘My recent home is on other side.’
Ma ba natē ovoccit eeta tōmōnya wukbagiik. ‘People sang for their past bulls.’
“Adim ngēnē narērūngi wu banannī ngato?” ‘Who took my past broom?’

Exercise 14

Een guak kēēna. ‘Others are trees.’



- Ĕĕn ciko nyarrangĭt. ‘These are arrows.’
- Ĕĕn nĕccĭĕ ĕĕth. ‘That is a goat.’
- Ĕĕn ĭmma laan. ‘Another is an arrow.’
- “Yei lĕgĕth oyokonta da nĕ nĭcĕ kurumtoi kĕrĕĕk ĭcĭ gĕĕla. ‘You people, go from that other side and we will meet at my house.’”

Exercise 15

<u>present</u>	Avĭ balna eeti ĭmma.	‘There was a certain person.’
<u>equate</u>	Ĕĕn eeti dĕtĭt.	‘The person is a man.’
<u>present</u>	Avu nyaapĕ.	There was the hare.
<u>adject</u>	Arĕgi kĭbaalĭcĭ coo.	‘This bird is alive.’
<u>equate</u>	Ĕĕn coo kĕlĕgĭt cĭ jakimi.	‘This is a huge animal.’
<u>adject</u>	Abiri balna kĕĕt neccĭĕ.	‘That tree was ripe.’
<u>equate</u>	Ĕĕn nĕ et cĭ egenyi.	‘He was a clever person.’
<u>present</u>	Aati dĕĕlĭa cĭk ĕĕn ramma.	‘There were two children.’
<u>adject</u>	Lĕĕngĕri thĕgĕmĭ	‘The buttock is small.’

Exercise 16

Relative clause connectors are in **bold** instead of circled.

<u>clause</u>	Kĕĕta coo avĭ eeti tidiina (cĭ ĕĕn dĕtĭt).	In tree <u>person</u> sat [who was man].
<u>clause</u>	Ayak balna kĕlĕgĕ [cĭk ayak otoo] tienit.	<u>Animals</u> [that have horns] had feast.
<u>phrase</u>	Ũrĕmtĕ kĭ makayyioit <u>nyakamuranya</u> [cĭk kabbĭrrĕnu] tamuatidiina natĕ.	They stayed with boss of <u>relatives</u> [that are wasps] in the sky.
<u>clause</u>	Mĕĕli kĕlĕgĕ [cĭk thĕk balna [wĭk ayak otoo]] doo.	There many <u>animals</u> [that indeed [that had horns]].
<u>clause</u>	“Kadimanĭ gĭmma [cĭ ĕĕn vĕlĕng.]”	“I do <u>something</u> [which called lie.]”
<u>clause</u>	Īthĕng ivitia kĕlĕgĕ [cĭk ĕĕn tur]	And <u>animals</u> [that were five] came

phrase	odolanit <u>kēlēgē</u> [cīk obbitik] ko.	and reached <u>animals</u> [that big].
clause	Ajaa <u>kēlēgē</u> [wūk athii [cī <u>ayak</u> otoo]] ēē.	The <u>animals</u> [which don't [that have horns]] came.

Exercise 17

<u>Aduwa Lokio Toukono iyainit coo.</u>	Iyainit cī aduwa Lokio Toukono coo. 'This story is told by Lokio Toukono.'
“ <u>Uwui, ēbēli niia nyia?</u> ”	“Uwui, nyia cī ēbēli niia wo?” “Hey, what are you singing?”
<u>Ēēn eeti dōft.</u>	Et cī ēēn dōft. 'The person is a man'
<u>Acinnu thī niigia yōkō</u> <u>atieni eeta atik ngaai ramma.</u>	Īnōōnō thī cī yōkō acinnu niigia atieni eeta atik ngaai ramma wo. 'That is why you see that men marry two wives.'

Exercise 18

Adjectives are in bold instead of circled.

īthōng kī <u>kūrūgūmīt</u> rūgūmōn cobbi gimma nōkō	'and they danced a big dance like that'
<u>ongollingce</u> eeta <u>ī</u> vorī pēēr	'the people became very white'
<u>uduktiak</u> eeta kēlēgē cīk obbitik <u>entek</u> ne,	'the people told the big animals saying,'
<u>Ayahana</u> gii cī <u>lēngērī</u> thūgūūmi	'something on which the buttock is small brought me (here)'
<u>Avī</u> balna patdacineti cīiitha iico.	'Was spaciousness inside house.'
“ <u>Koot</u> thīna <u>gaama</u> aneeta thūgūūm ngītī <u>lēngērī</u> wo.”	“Hold onto me on the buttock, on the place that is small.”
<u>Ikiyia</u> <u>idima</u> eeti coo looron cī uuni	'this person came and took a long rope'
<u>utuvuyia</u> nēēgē kēlēgē cīk kīdīk ko <u>entek</u> ne,	'they called the small animals saying, '

Exercise 19

Demonstrative adjectives are in **bold** instead of circled. Indefinite adjectives are underlined twice.

Avī balna eeti <u>imma</u> ithōng otod kēēta	‘There was certain person and he climbed a tree’
Ēēn thī nēēgē ngaai ciko <u>ramma</u> .	‘They were these two women.’
Ūūk odolān kēēt <u>imma</u> vurut, abiri balna kēēt neccie .	‘She went and stayed under a certain tree, that tree was ripe.’
Adaak kēnnē kūthūūtha ngaa coo .	‘Then the ants bit this woman.’
“Kacūrtha koccia na kēlēgē ciko kūū?”	“How will I defeat these animals?”
Īthōng ma ngī ivitia eeta <u>guak</u> ,	‘And when other people came,’
Utuvuyia thēk kēlēgē cīk ēēn <u>tur</u> wo, ithōng addaīt nēēgē kēlēgē nīkē .	‘They called for the five animals, and they ate those animals.’
Ikiyia idima eeti coo kidongua <u>iyyo</u> cobbi ḍrṛōt,	‘This person came and took three big drums,’

Exercise 20

“Avī <u>yōkō</u> giī cī athī vōlōng wo nga?”	“Where is the thing called a lie now?”
Mēēli <u>thēk</u> <u>nabō</u> kēlēgē cīk athii cī ayak otoo.	‘The animals without horns were many indeed.’
Ngaatī athikni eeta ciko thōōth coo <u>kētē</u> wo,	‘When the people hear this word like this,’
Ngaatī acīnī itik et coo kuui ciitha cīnnī <u>icītō</u> .	‘When she say (him), she carried this man, taking him into her house.’
“Avī kōrōōgi cannie <u>icidiinu</u> .”	“My home is on the other side (of the mountain).”
“Uwui ayai <u>gia</u> <u>gōō</u> niia buu otoo?”	“Have you always had horns?”
Adīma nē nyaapō ēlē cīnnī kī vōlōng <u>thēk</u> <u>kiir</u> nē.	‘The hare indeed took himself to be the true lie.’
Avu eeti kēēta <u>tidīma</u> ithōng uluccia <u>loota</u> .	‘The man stayed up in the tree and came down.’
Ūūk ngaa coo ciitha oko acīn doolec ciitha <u>natē</u> .	‘This woman went in the house to see there the child in the house.’

Exercise 21

Question pronouns are in **bold** instead of circled.

<u>clause</u>	“Kacūrtha koccia na kēlēgē ciko kūū ?”	“How can I defeat these animals?”
<u>object</u>	“Yei laang nyia cī <u>adimani</u> niia wo?”	“Please friend, what is this that you are doing?”

<u>location</u>	“ <u>Avĩ</u> yõkõ gii cĩ athĩ võlõng wo nga ?”	“Where is thing which is called a ‘lie’ now?”
<u>clause</u>	“Uwui kũũ nabõ laang <u>kacĩn</u> gõõ gii kũũ ?”	“Oh, how friend, can we see the thing, how?”
<u>subject</u>	“ Ngẽnẽ cĩ <u>adim</u> narẽrũngi cannĩ?”	“Who took my broom?”
<u>location</u>	“Narẽrũngi cannĩ nga ?”	“Where is my broom?”
<u>object</u>	“Yõkõ no niia <u>ẽẽni</u> nyia ?”	“Who are you now?”

Exercise 22

Incomplete verbs are in **bold** instead of circled.

<u>niigia</u> <u>nẽẽgẽ</u>	Ĩnõõnõ thĩ cĩ yõkõ acinnu niigia atieni eeta atik ngaai ramma wo.	‘That is why you see men marrying two wives.’
<u>nẽẽgẽ</u> <u>nẽẽgẽ</u> <u>na</u> <u>nẽ</u> <u>nẽẽgẽ</u>	Ĩcĩnĩt kẽlẽgẽ cĩk ayak otoo wo nyaapõ “ Kadimani gimma cĩ ẽẽn võlõng.” Ĩthõng <u>ijjini</u> gii cĩ athĩ võlõng.	‘The animals with horns saw the hare.’ ‘I am doing something which is called a ‘lie’.’ ‘And they asked for the thing which is called a lie.’
<u>nẽẽgẽ</u>	Ngaatĩ athikne eeta ciko thõõth coo kêtẽ wo,	‘When the animals heard this message,’
<u>naaga</u> <u>naaga</u>	Kadimnya naaga ganõn kĩ Ikar, kathinna ne,	‘We want peace with the Toposa, we say,’
<u>na</u> <u>na</u>	Ma katina <u>kidima</u> <u>karaheha</u> maam õgĩ cĩk aburi ijja.	‘And then I take and put other hot water into the pot.’
<u>nẽ</u>	Kĩbaalĩc coo amut athĩnĩ.	‘There is a bird in the hands.’
<u>niigia</u> <u>niigia</u> <u>nẽ</u> <u>niia</u>	Ma ngĩ adimnyu , niigia arukcu <u>uruĩt</u> . Uwui, ebeli nyia?	‘And if you want, you can kill it to be dead.’ ‘Hey, what are you singing?’
<u>naaga</u> <u>naaga</u>	Mĩ <u>kurubta</u> kẽlẽgĩt ĩmma cĩ kothii otoo, karuk woccia ni.	‘If we find unhorned animal we will kill it.’

Exercise 23

Incomplete verbs are in **bold** instead of circled.

<u>nẽẽgẽ</u> <u>nẽẽgẽ</u> <u>nẽẽgẽ</u>	<u>Ivitia</u> eeta ciko <u>ĩcĩnĩt</u> nyaapõ <u>ĩthico</u> otoo.	Animals came saw hare whose horns had disappeared.
--	--	--

<u>nē</u> <u>nē</u>	Ma balna <u>ikiyia</u> gōdnīa īthōng iyētha et cīnī wo <u>ithiwa</u> .	Her friend came and found her man had disappeared.
<u>nēēgē</u>	Utuveco nēēgē nyaapō.	They called for the hare.

Exercise 24

Completive verbs are underlined twice instead of in a box.

Incompletive verbs are in **bold** instead of circled.

<u>aniita</u> <u>aniita</u> <u>īnōōnō</u>	Ma kacinni , kaminanni na aniita. Illalei kēnnē tuluuwu ennei ne,	‘When I see (you), I love you.’ ‘The squirrel begs and says to him,’
<u>aniita</u> <u>īnōōnō</u>	“Niia mī <u>ayahai</u> ngaa ahat īthōng <u>ūwūrūtēk</u> mōōlēt, . . .”	“‘If the queen brings you food and unties the calf . . .”
<u>aneeta</u>	“Oo <u>anycangu</u> bai aneeta.”	“Please let me go.”
<u>agiita</u>	Īthōng kaduwacung agiita et cīk ēgīnu Laarimo,	‘We are telling you people of Laarim,’
<u>īgōōgō</u>	Kennei , “Athii cī kacudure, katali ōrrōt.”	‘I said to them, “I am not angry, I am happy.”’
<u>aniita</u>	Ma ngī ovo eeta jora ennei eeta aniita ne,	‘And if the people are going to fight, people tell you,’
<u>īnōōnō</u> <u>agēēta</u>	Ivitia katī Ikari <u>eberyia</u> eeta gii cī agiiranet agēēta tīmangī.	‘Then the Toposa came and people took something for killing us (called) ‘timang’.’

Exercise 25

Incompletive verbs are in **bold** instead of circled.

Ma thī mī <u>odolan</u> eeti ci a ne kēgēenyī wo, kī kentek ne, “Kībaalīc coo <u>amut</u> athīnei.”	And then when they reached wise person, they said, “There is a bird in hands.”
“Mī <u>adimnyu</u> kadak <u>agayyu</u> niigia.”	“‘If you want it to die, you know how.’”
<u>Adiim</u> dōōlīa ma ballīa kūi eeti ne, “ <u>Arūgī</u> ,” <u>uruūt</u> ballīa dōōlīa ciko kībaalīc, <u>athī</u> balna nēēgē ne, ma <u>aduwa</u> eeti coo thōōth coo, kī thī kutungit dōōlīa kībaalīc coo kūrūk .	Children wanted, if person said “Alive” these children would kill the bird, it happened that they, when man said this word, then children allowed bird to live.
<u>Itik</u> et coo <u>ēcēbēk</u> et coo karteenta īcītō, kī kuui ōlōō.	She took man, tied man to grass, and took him home.
“ <u>Bit</u> <u>avvu</u> loota kī kitiryai kūthūūtha doolec.”	Remain with blackants to receive child.

Exercise 26

Singular command verbs are in **bold** instead of circled. Plural command verbs are underlined twice instead of boxed.

“ <u>Ēcēbīt</u> tīn cuguucak.”	“Tie your cows.”
“ Bit avvu loota kī <u>kitiryai</u> kūthūūtha doolec.”	“Go, remain down for the black ants to produce a child.”
“ Dima dongok ĩthōng ariha aneeta ĩcītō.”	“Get baby pouch and put me inside.”
“ <u>Koot</u> thīna gaama aneeta thūgūūm ngītī lēngēri wo, gaam jurung nga.”	“We go, hold onto me on place of small buttock, hold properly!”
“ Lūcīa loota mī thōng athii cī <u>ēēni</u> kēlēgīt, ija thī loota ngato.”	“Come down if you not an animal, then come down here.”
“Yei niigia nyī nga <u>ukonu</u> , yōkō niigia <u>avuu</u> niigia vėlēk <u>īito</u> ngaai cīganīk. Aneeta coo, nyī nga <u>ukonu</u> nabo.”	“You, please do not fight! Now you, you all remain you be as my wives. I am here, do not fight any more.”
“ Uuk kidong cī dīci, <u>tīl tīl tīl</u> .”	“Beat the drum that is small, <i>tum</i> .”

Exercise 27

Verbal nouns are in **bold** instead of circled.

<u>Ovo</u> kabbīrrēna da tamuatiina a ne, <u>ovo adiman</u> tienit cīning cī tiento .	Wasps were going to sky, saying that they would have their wedding feast.
Ngaatī <u>athikni</u> kabbīrrēna belinit coo wo,	When wasps heard this singing,
Īthōng ma ngī <u>ēdēcīa</u> eevinti , <u>kivitia</u> thī <u>koot</u> ōlōō.	‘And when they finish the cultivation, then we come and go home.’
<u>Ayak</u> balna kēlēgē cīk <u>ayak</u> otoo tienit , ĩthōng balna <u>ayak</u> rumenit cīning.	Animals with horns were having wedding, and they were having companionship.

Exercise 28

Singular command verbs are in **bold** instead of circled. Plural command verbs are underlined twice instead of boxed.

“Yei lōgōth <u>oyokonta</u> da nō nīcē <u>kurumtoi</u> kōrōōk ĩcī gōōla.”	“You people, go from the other side and we will meet at my house.”
“ <u>Anycīk</u> <u>kidimta</u> <u>kanyīha</u> , thī nēnnē viyo	“Let them bring what I gave them

na ĩgđđgđ vĕlĕk.”	already.”
“ <u>Ivítia</u> baai thĭ ngato <u>ivítia adaakte</u> .”	“Then please come here, come to be eaten.”
“Vđlđng coo coo iro ooti .”	“This lie, this take and go with.”
“ <u>Ayakta</u> da ngato <u>kebeloi</u> <u>kithihit</u> da naaga đũwwũk.”	“Please bring him here to sing so that all of us can hear.”

Exercise 29

Completive verbs are in *italics* instead of boxed. Incompletive verbs are in **bold** instead of circled.

Ma balna nyaapđ <i>avu</i> gđđ ĩthđng <u>udunga</u> .	Then the hare was there and dosed.
<u>Ebervia</u> eeta kĕlĕgĕ cĭk ĕĕn tur oo.	The people chose five animals.
Ma thĭna <u>oyokona</u> nyaapđ ĩthđng <i>ivira</i> .	Then the hare came around and ran.
Ngaatĭ abui , <u>iliba</u> nyaapđ a noko ne, Puul! <u>ivira</u> <i>ubukanek</i> eet ciko tukan kĕbĕrĕ <i>kongolingce</i> .	When they opened, hare came out saying Pow! he powdered the animals in the eyes with flour.
<u>Adima</u> nĕ nyaapđ ĕlĕ cĭnnĭ kĭ vđlđng thĕk kiir nĕ,	The hare took himself to be the lie, the great lie.
<u>Edecia</u> iyainiti coo ngato.	This story is now finished.
Atdukai gđđ ĩnđđnđ munnĭ cĭk abiri ĕbĕra thĭgđ ngaa coo.	He threw her some ripe fruit and this woman took it.
<i>Avu</i> eeti kĕĕta tidiina ĩthđng <u>ulucia</u> loota.	The person in the tree came down.
Ma balna <u>ikivira</u> gđđnĭa ĩthđng iyetha et cĭnnĭ wo <i>ithiwa</i> .	Then her friend came and found that her man was missing.

Exercise 30

Completive verbs are in *italics* instead of boxed. Incompletive verbs are in **bold** instead of circled.

“Yei lđgđth <i>oyokonta</i> da nđ nĭcĕ <u>kurumtoi</u> kđrđđk ici gđđla.”	“You people, go from the other side we will meet a my home.”
“ <i>Ayakta</i> da ngato <u>kĕbĕloi</u> <i>kithihit</i> da naaga đũwwũk.” <i>Ayakta</i> thĭ eeta ĩnđđnđ <i>entek</i> ne, “ <u>Bĕloi!</u> ”	“Bring him here to sing so that all of us can hear.” Then people brought him, said “Sing!”

Avu thĩ ngaa coo ãthõng *utukuroi*. There was this queen and she cooked.

Oot thĩ *avuto* ðlõð
ma balna natẽ *ũrũmtẽ*
ĩthõng *anyawoi* nẽ . . . They went and stayed at home
and were united there
and she became pregnant . . .

Ma balna *avuto*
ĩthõng *uktoi* thõðth cĩ et coo wo. They were there
and argued about this problem.

Avuto thĩ ãnĩnga *ukoi*
urumte nẽgẽgẽ *itiktoi* kĩ et coo. They stayed together without fighting
and were married to this man.

Exercise 31

Completive verbs are in *italics* instead of boxed. Incompletive verbs are in **bold** instead of circled.

Ma mĩ **eted** eeti looron wo,
utukwai tuluuwu *uruk* looc noko bũth. And when wasp cut rope,
squirrel fell, slammed into ground.

Ma thĩ balna eeti coo mĩ **acĩn** ngaa coo wo,
atdukai gõõ ãnõðnõ munnĩ cĩk **abiri**. And then when man saw woman,
he threw her some ripe fruit.

“*Bit avvu* loota
kĩ *kitiryai* kũthũũtha doolec.” “Go, remain down
for black ants to produce a child.”

Exercise 32

Completive verbs are in *italics* instead of boxed. Incompletive verbs are in **bold** instead of circled.

Ĩthõng *õbõwẽ* ðõllĩani coo, nyatarka *alangan*
kõra. ‘And wax was melted because
the sun melted it.’

“*Ivitia* baai thĩ ngato *ivitia* *adaakte*.” “Then come here, come be eaten.”

Ma thĩ mĩ **anyakcie** gonnĩ wo, ‘Then when friend was pregnant,

Ma thĩ thẽk balna natẽ *uwuddie* kẽlẽgẽ. Then the animals got drunk.

“Athii cĩ **kagawua** tĩna, tĩna nekie **angide**
ee **angid** ngẽnẽ?” “We do not know cows, these cows
that were raided, who raided?”

Ma ngĩ *ũrũjane* laata, *kidimta* thĩ nõnõ
cĩ ðĩcĩ *katarita*. ‘When beer flour is prepared, then
I first take small amount and test.’

Exercise 33

Completive verbs are in *italics* instead of boxed. Incompletive verbs are in **bold** instead

of circled.

Ma thîna *oyokona* nyaapõ ìthõng *ivir ûûk kodolan* kõrõõk, *urubbothik* ngaa cînnî.

Then hare came and ran until he arrived home where found his wife.

Ngaatî **abui**, *iliba* nyaapõ a noko ne, puul, *ivira* *ubukane* eet ciko tukan kēbērē.

When they opened it, hare came out powered animals in eyes with flour.

Ma balna thî natē *ûtîngtēk* eeta tuluuwu natē.

Then the wasps left the squirrel there.

“Niia mî *ayahai* ngaa ahat ìthõng *ûwûrûtēk* mōõlēt, . . .”

“If the queen brings you food and unties the calf . . .”

“Nē *arawõthik* yõkõ eeti coo looc,” monogo nga reen loocî.

“He reached the ground,” although was still far from ground.”

Itik et coo *ecebek* et coo karteenta ìcītõ, kî *kuui* õlõõ.

She took man, tied man to grass, and took him home.

Exercise 34

Completive verbs are in *italics* instead of boxed. Incomplete verbs are in **bold** instead of circled.

Õõt irioit ìthõng ma balna mî *odolanit* gõõla ‘They went and when reached road’

Alangan kõr otoo cîgînik, ìthõng *obowe* dõllîani coo, nyatarka *alangan* kõra.

Sun melted his horns and wax was melted because sun melted it.

Adiman balna kēlēgē tienit cîning.

Animals were having their wedding.

Ma thîna *õõt* ìthõng *kodolanit* tammutiddin. Then they went and arrived in sky.

“Yei nyia cî **adimani** niia wo?”

“What are you doing?”

Exercise 35

Ma *balna* elemit thî kabbîrrēna.

And then wasps agreed.

Ma *ba* natē ovoccit eeta tōmōnya cigik. Then people sang for their bulls.

Ikiyia *balna* nyaapõ buu ûrūmtē kî kēlēgē cîk ayak otoo.

Hare also came and gathered with animals with horns.

“Mî kurubta kēlēgīt ìmma cî kothii otoo korgena icinac, karuk *woccia* ni.” “If we find another animal without horns among us, he will surely be killed.”

“Kacurtha koccia na kēlēgē ciko kūū? “How will I defeat these animals?”

Ma ba mī avīya gōōnīa bonato ēē, When her friend was still in bush,

Exercise 36

(From Squirrel 34-40)

(Ēbēla tuluuwu ne), “Ayahanna gii
cī lēēngēri thūgūūmī
oo oo jōkō jōkō nathē.”

Ngaafī athikni kabbīrrēna belinit coo wo,
avarracītō

ito ne, “Uwui, ēbēli nyia? Nyia
goo cī ōgōōn kētē wo?”

(From Squirrel 49-50)

“Nīia mī ayahai ngaa ahāt
īthōng ūwūrūtēk mōōlēt,
nyī arui nyangatarit aa.”

(From Squirrel 76-81)

Ethek eeti coo ne,

“Bīt noko

īthōng mī ī ōjōōn looci,

uk kidong cī dīcī, *tīl tīl tīl*.

Ma thī ngī ōjōōn nabo looci,

uk kidong cī dīcī, *til, til, til*.

Ma thī ngī mī ōjōōn nabo looc tōdōwa,

ruk nabo cobbi ca, *bum, bum, bum, bum*.

(Ethiopian 3-4)

Ngīfī abai yōkō nēēgē,

kēngēryioi oo neccie, īthōng abaito Kawulatiy

ngīfī ave Mūnēcī cobbi.

Ngīfī abai nēēgē wo,

ēēn looci balna kōr kothii tammu.

(Squirrel sang,) “Something which
has small buttock brought me here.
Oh, oh, this is a good black bull.”

When the wasps heard this singing,
they became angry
saying, “Hey, what are you singing?
Are you always like this?”

“When the queen brings you food
and unties the calf,
do not kill the good feeling, ok?”

The person (wasp) told (the squirrel),
“Go down,
and when the ground is near,
beat the smallest drum, *tīl, tīl, tīl*.
And then when the ground is nearer,
beat the small drum, *til, til, til*.
And then when ground is even nearer,
beat the large drum, *bum, bum, bum*.”

Where they now lived,
those separated, Kawulat people lived
where there is a big Muneci tree.
Where they lived,
there was sun and no rain.

Exercise 37

(From Women 9-12)

Ēbēra thīgō ngaa coo
adii.

Ma balna avu

īthōng utdukaak awēēn ramma,

avu ngaa coo

īthōng ī ne,

“Ma ngī ēēni kēlēgīt

kōdē ēēni et,

lūcīa loota.”

(From Women 16-18)

The woman took it
and she ate it.

Then he was staying
and threw down two rats,
and there was this woman
and she said,

“Then if you are an animal
or you are human,
come down here.”

Itik et coo
ēcēbēk et coo karteenta ĩcītō,
kī kuui ōlōō.
Ōōt thī avuto ōlōō
ma balna natē ūrūmtē
īthōng anyawoi nē,
ēēn thī nēēgē ngaai ciko ramma.

(From Squirrel 3-10)

Avu tuluuwu buu
īthōng idim ūūk nē buu
irioit kī eet ciko,
ennei kēnnē kabbīrrēna tuluuwu ne,
“Yei oko goo niabu nga?
Yōkō no niia ēēni nyia?”
Illalei kēnnē tuluuwu
ennei ne,
“Oo anycangu bai aneeta buu
kūūk lōgōth koko thēk na buu.”
Ma balna elemit thī kabbīrrēna ngatī
irioi kī tuluuwu ovoyyi tammutiddina.

She took this man,
tied this man onto the grass,
in order to take him home.
As a result they stayed at home
then were there together
and she became pregnant
but there were two woman there.

There was also a squirrel
and he also wanted to go,
going with these people,
instead wasps said to squirrel,
“Where are you going?
Who are you now?”
Instead squirrel begged
and said,
“Please let me go also
let me go along with others also.”
So then the wasps agreed
and they went with the squirrel to sky.

Exercise 38

(From Hare 14-16)

Adiman balna kēlēgē tienit cīnīng,
adaak kidi,
awūd mērtē,
īthōng kī kūrūgūmīt
rūgūmōn cobbi gimma noko.

(From Hare 91-92)

Ma thī balna avu nyaapō
īthōng ūrūk nēnē,
nyatarka nē ēēn et cī ēgēēnyī ōrrōt.

(Squirrel 9-10)

Ma balna elemit thī kabbīrrēna
ngatī irioi kī tuluuwu ovoyyi tammutiddina.

(From Squirrel 11-12)

“Gaama aneeta thūgūūm ngītū lēēngēri wo,”

(From Squirrel 89-91)

Eted thī eeti cobbi looron
a nē, “Ne arawothik yōkō eeti coo looc,”
monogo nga reen looci.

(Ethiopian 3)

Ngītī abai yōkō nēēgē,
kēngēryioi oo neccie, īthōng abaito Kawulatiy
ngītū ave Mūnēcī cobbi.

Animals were having their wedding,
and they ate meat
and they drank beer
and as a result they danced
a very big dance.

And so the hare stayed
and lived well
because he is very clever.

Then wasps agreed
when they went with squirrel to sky.

“Hold my buttock where is small, . . .”

Then the big wasp cut the rope
saying, “He reached the ground,”
although he was far from ground.

Where they now lived,
those separated, Kawulat people lived
where there is a big Muneci tree.

(From Ethiopia 55)

Īthōng ecebta ngīthōroi ciko guo rīmmīa
itionito thī et coo,
ngaatī odolani Tataman.

And these youth tied fire with wood
then accompanied this person
until they reached Tataman.

Exercise 39

(From Squirrel 20-21)

Avu tuluuwu
īthōng ēbēla tōmōt kīdīc
ī ne, “Ayahana gii
cī lēēngēri thūgūūmi.”

There was the squirrel
and he sang to his bull
he said that, “A thing brought me
that has a small buttock.”

(From Squirrel 41-43)

Ma balna thī natē ūtūngtēk eeta tuluuwu natē
iito ne, “Ivita kōōt naaga
anycik kavu natē
kagawa et cī ayak īnōōnō
okoyyi loota.”

Then the wasps left the squirrel there
they said that, “Come, let’s go
and leave him there,
I know a person who takes him
and he takes him down.”

(From Squirrel 45-46)

Ūrūmtē kī makayyioit nyakamuranya
cīk kabbīrrēnu tamuatidiina natē.

They stayed with boss of the relatives
who are wasps in the sky

Exercise 40

“Yei niigia nyī nga ukonu”

“Please do not fight.”

“Avvu tiv kothii thōōth nicco.”

“Keep quiet about such things.”

Avuto thī īnīnga ukoi ūrūmte nēēgē.

So they stayed together without fighting.

“Nyī arui nyangatarit aa.”

“Don’t kill the good feeling, ok?”

Akku eeti coo irioni ačī athik ne.

Person came to advise, he not listening.

Ajaa kēlēgē wūk athii cī ayak otoo ēē. Animals that don’t have horns.

Exercise 41

All corrections are made to the sentences below.

Īthōng ennek ne, “Kayak naaga kōr cobbi
cī kēlēgē cīk ayak otoo doo.”

And he said, “Now we are having a
big day for the animals with horns.”

Avu naaa coo īthōng ī ne, “Narērūngī cannī
nga?”

The woman asked, “Where is my
broom?”

Ennei kēlēgē kēnnē nēēgē ne, “Ivir bathī
vōlōng neccie.”

Then the animals told them, “The lie
has escaped.”

Avu balna nyaapõ
ĩthõng umuk ñ ne, “Kacũrtha koccia na
kêlêgẽ ciko kũũ?”

The hare was thinking
and said, “How can I defeat
these animals?”